

THE FRENCH TUTOR:

BY WAY OF
GRAMMAR
EXACTLY AND FULLY
Teaching all the most necessary
Rules, for the attaining of the
French tongue.

WHEREUNTO
Are also annexed three Dialogues ; and a
touch of French Compliments ; all for the
furtherance and practice of Gentle-
men , Schollers , and others
desirous of the said
Language.

The second edition, carefully corrected and enlarged.

By *Robert Sherwood* Londoner.

L O N D O N,
Printed by ROBERT YOUNG.
M. DC. XXXIV.



Aux Illustres & Tres-nobles
Seigneurs, & Gentils-hommes
François, Allemans, Danois, &
Flamands, desireux d'apprendre
la langue Angloise. ,



YANT (Messeigneurs)
eu l'honneur de mon-
strer à plusieurs grands
Seigneurs, vos compa-
triots, la langue Angloise en ceste
ville de Londres, & ayant receu de
leur faveur beaucoup plus d'hon-
neur que n'ont porté mes merites,
a 3 l'ay

I'ay bien voulu pour ne me mon-
strer du tout ingrat, dedier ce mien
labeur , tel qu'il est , à vos genereu-
ses Seigneuries , esperant un jour
de publier souz vostre adveu une
Grammaire Angloise toute entie-
re : Vous suppliant cependant de
prendre en gré ceste petite reco-
gnissance , de Celuy qui est , &
tousjours sera.

De vos Seigneuries

tres-humble Serviteur.

R. Sherwood de Londres.

To the Reader.

THis Grammar I have compiled and gathered, partly out of my long experience of Teaching, and partly by following in many things Monsieur Maupas of Blois, a man well knowne to some of the greatest of this Kingdome (who have travelled) to bee the learnedest and most expert Teacher of this tongue. I have proceeded herein by a Grammaticall order, & having given plaine and perfect rules for pronounciation, I shew the nature and use of the Articles, a thing of no small importance in this Language; also the way to finde out the Genders of all Nounes: the Conjugating of all Verbes regular and irregular;

To the Reader.

irregular; and after which followeth a list of most of the undeclinable parts (which commonly doe much hinder learners) Alphabetically Englished; with a most ample Syntax of all the parts of speech: and in the end I have framed a copious index, expounding all such Nounes and Verbs as lye scattered any where Unenglished: Lastly, thou hast here three Dialogues, and other peeces for thy further practice. In all which, my ayme and endeavour hath beene to profit the lovers of the Language, and my onely desire is thy courteous approbation: which if I shall obtaine, I shall be encouraged to further labours in this kinde.

From my Schoole in S. Sepulchers
Churchyard. R. S.



THE FRENCH TUTOR.

CHAP I.

Of Pronunciation.



OMITTING many Grammaticall definitions and observations, well knowne to all that are acquainted with the Latine Tongue, wee will first treat of words, or parts of speech; then of their construction. And because one maine difficultie for the attainment of this language, consisteth in the Pronunciation, we will begin with that.

1. *The Pronunciation of the Vowels.*

A is very fully sounded, as in the English word *All*; as *L'avare cache son avoir*, The covetous person hideth his substance. This letter doubled, is sounded single, yet long, as *aage*, which read *âge*, age.

B

E Hath

E hath a three-fold sound : the first is called Masculine, because it is pronounced strongly and fully, as in the second syllable of the Latine word *docere*, or as in the first syllables of the English words, *Ever, present* : at the end of words it is marked with an acute accent thus, *Bonté, beauté*; or it commeth afore *r, z*, or *e* feminine, as *Aimer, aimez, aimée*. The second sort is the feminine *e*; so called, because of its weak and defective sound, very short and scarcely heard, as in the second syllable of the Latin word *facere*, or the latter of the English words, *Little, open, ever*, as *Ame*. Hence are these things observable. First, that by reason of the short sound of this *e* at the end of words, the syllable afore it is made long, and is lifted up in pronunciation, as *Alongée*. Secondly, that it being at the end of a word, and the next word beginning with a Vowell, or *h* mute, it is not sounded at all; but the word wherein it is, joyned to the word following, is sounded as one, as *Nostre aage, vostre homme*, which pronounce *Noträge votroome*. Thirdly, that in Monasyllables, such as *me, te, le, se, &c.* coming afore a vowell or *h* mute, the *e* is not written, but an Apostrophall note set in stead thereof, as *l'ame*; and the further to exemplifie these two last notes, marke this verse :

Puis que l'ame humaine est d'une essence immortelle.
Seeing that the Soule of man is of an immortall essence. Read it thus ;

Pui ke lam umean e dun effans immortelle.

Yet this *e* in some phrases, at the end of Verbes of the first person, the pronoun *je* following, is sounded almost as *e* masculine, for the more Emphasis, as *Cherche-je vostre dommage*? Doe I seeke your hurt? The third sort of *e* is called the open *e*, because it is pronounced with a more open mouth than the two former

former, as the English doe their Diphthong *ea* in *Sea*, *feare*, and the like. It is in all monosyllables in *r* and *s*, as *fer*, *mer*, *les*, *mes*, *des*, *tes*, *ses*, *ces*, *pres*, and in these dissyllables in *es* and *er*, *Expres*, *apres*, *accés*, *exces*, *proces*, *deces*, *succes*, *fier*, *danger*, *mestier*, *cordonnier*, and other names of Occupations, *messager*, *vacher*, *archer*, &c. Also afore *c*, *l*, *t*, and *x*, as *avec*, *tel*, *discret*, *perplex*; also in all words, whose first syllable is *Es*, or *E*, as *Ecrire*, *Estudier*, *Eviter*, *Eglise*. Note that in the words *Netteté*, *Elevé*, and some others, all the three sorts or sounds of *e* are found; the first being the open *e*, the second the feminine, and the third the masculine.

Further, observe these three rules: First, a word ending in *é* masculine, if there be *e* in the syllable afore it, the same is short, as *levé*: Secondly, a word ending in *e* feminine, if there be *e* in the syllable afore it, the same is the open *e*, as *leve*. Thirdly, when this vowel is doubled in the midst of words, they are both masculine; or the first masculine, and the second the open *e*, as *Séel*, *réel*, *agréer*, *guéer*, &c. but if it be doubled at the end of words, then the first is the masculine, and the latter the feminine, as *Aimée* beloved.

Also *e* afore *m* and *n*, is sounded as *a*, as *Entendement*, which pronounce *antandement*; except in the third persons plurall of verbs ending in *ent*, as *Aiment*, which sound *imer*, the *e* beeing thort; except also when *i* commeth afore it in the same syllable, as *Mien*, *tien*, *sien*, *bien*, *rien*, *chien*: but when the syllable is parted, it is sounded as *a*, as in these; *Audience*, *science*, *expérience*, *escient*, *ingredient*, *inconvenient*, *expedient*, *orient*, *sicnt*, *client*, *patient*, and their derivatives.

I Vowell is pronounced as the English doe their

diphthong *ee* in *deem*, *meet*, *needy*, and the like, as *fir mine*, which sound *feet meene*. And note that *i* is set afore *ll* in the midst, and *l* at the end of words, without being pronounced, as *faillir*; it serving onely for a signe of the liquification of the *l*, as in that letter shall be shewed.

O is pronounced as in Latin or English, saving afore *m*, *n*, and *u*, making together a syllable; where it is sounded as the English doe their *oo* in *Moon*, *groom*, *brood*; as *Mon bon homme*, which reade *moon boon oome*: but it hath its owne sound where the syllable is divided, as in words compound with the Preposition *Pro*, as *Promettre*, *provenir*, and in words formed of the Greeke and Latine, as *Comete*, *tome*, *homicide*, *domicile*, *dominer*, *vomir*, *honorable*; *novice*, *ovale*, *povre* (which is also written *pauvre*.) Also *o* afore *l* in some words, which is sounded *oo*; as in *l* shall be shewed.

U vowell hath a sound peculiar to the French, after a kinde of whistling, by opening a little the end of the lips, and as it were betweene *ou* and *i* (French) except in the diphthong *ou*. Examples of the sounds comming neer to it, you may have in the Scottish word *gud*, or the English words *busie*, *lute*.

T is never used for a consonant (as in English,) and is sounded as the French *i*, or English *ee*; yet is never set to liquifie the *l*, as the *i* is. It is used either alone, as *y est-il?* is he there? or where *i* might be mistaken for a consonant, as *yver*, *yeux*; or betweene two vowels, as *payement*, *playe*, *joye*; and in the end of words, as *foy*, *appuy*; or lastly, to keepe the orthographie, as *Syllable*, *Mystere*, &c.

The pronounciation of Consonants.

THe generall rule of consonants, is, that when two or three consonants come together, none but the later is pronounced, as *Estes-vous là ?* are you there ? which reade *Ete voo là ?* except the first be any of the liquids, *l, m, n, r*, or *c*, or sometime : as *Mon livre*, my booke, *avec moy*, with me ; where the *n* & *c* are sounded ; or otherwise the rule may be this : *B, d, g, p, f, t, x*, and *z* are not pronounced (at the end of words especially) when they come after another consonant (especially beginning the next word) as *Tantost fait*, soone done ; which sound, *Tanto fet* : yet any consonant finishing a period, is ever pronounced. And for better understanding of this whole rule, take this large example : *Il est trop tard de fermer l'estable quand es chevaux sont dehors* : It is too late to shut the stable when the horses be gone ; which must thus be pronounced, *Il e tro tar de fermer letable kan leshevo soon dehors*.

B in the midst of words, comming afore another consonant (viz. *m, n, f, t, v*) may be pronounced, yet moderately ; as *Absence, absynthe obmettre, submettre, abnegation, substance, nonobstant, obtenir, subvenir, subvertir*. But in the preposition *Sous*, and in these words, *subject, devoir, debteur, dette*, it is not pronounced, and it is in your choyce to write it or not. Also at the end of words : as *Plomb, palomb, coulomb*, the *b* is not sounded.

C, afore *e, i*, and *y*, is sounded as *s* : as *Cecy*. But afore other vowels, as *k* : as *Car, corps* ; *ç* with an *s* or tail under, is sounded as *s*, or *ss*, as *deçà, façon*. Also *Ch* is pronounced as *sh*, as *chose, chemin*, except in the Greeke words *Archange, caractere, chrestien, chresme* ;

and in *Cholere*, *chorde*, *eschole*, *Cichorée*; and in proper names, as *Nicholas*: in all which sound it as *k*, omitting *h*. At the end of words *C* is pronounced; as *Avec*, *fac*, *tric*, *trac*, and commonly also in the midst of a word; as *Accident*, *accepter*, *acte*, *action*, *fiction*, *delict*, *dister*, *succes*, *effectuer*, *affection*, *infecter*, *facteur*, *detracteur*, &c. except it follow a diphthong, as *Luit*, *alaiter*, *fruit*, *nuit*, *s'annuiter*, *luiter*, *traict*, and its derivatives, *traicter*, *attrait*, &c. *fait*, *point*, *jointure*; except also *succer*, *effect*, *jeit*, *list*, *dict*, and their derivatives, *jeiter*, *subjeit*, *projeit*, *aliter*, *edict*: in all which *C* is not pronounced, saving in *Effectuer* above said, and *Conjecture*.

D finishing a syllable and comming afore *m*, or *j*, or *v*. consonants, is commonly not sounded, as *Admiral*, *adjuger*, *advancer*; except in these, *Admettre*, *admirer*, *administrer*, *adverbe*, *adversaire*, *adjection*, *adversité*, and their derivatives. Also **D** at the end of a word, the next beginning with a vowell or *h* mute, is sounded as *t*, as *Apprend-il?* *grand honneur*, which reade *apprantil*, *grantonneur*: and so after an *n* at the end of words, it serves to lengthen that syllable.

F at the end of words is ever plainly pronounced, as *œuf*, *soif*, *vis*: but in feminine Adjectives, whose Masculines end in *f*, it is not pronounced, as *briefue* of *brief*, *griefue* of *grief*, *soüefue* of *soüef*, &c.

G afore *e*, *i*, and *y*, hath a kinde of soft sound as *j* consonant, as *gisant*, *juge*: but afore any other vowell hard, as *Garder*, *gouverner*. Sometimes betweene *g* and one of these vowels; *a*, *o*, is put an *e*, which is not pronounced, but serveth onely to mollifie the *g*, as *bourgeois*, *songeard*, *geolier*, &c. and contrariwise, *u* is oftentimes set between *g* and *e*, or *i*, to harden its pronunciation (the *u* not being sounded) as *Guerir*, *guerre*, *guise*; which sound as the English doe *gues*,

Gilbert:

Gilbert : yet in these words, *Esguifer*, and the proper name *Guise*, the *u* is pronounced. When *g* cometh afore *n*, it hath a faint and liquid sound, not parting the *g* and *n*, but making them together to be the beginning of the syllable following, as *Oignon*, *mignon*, *vigne*, *allemagne*, *compagnie*, *soigner*, *compagnon*, which sound *mi-gnon*, *compa-gnon*; or almost as the English *minion*, *companion*; *nion* making but one, not two syllables: except *Cognoistre*, and its compounds and derivatives, in which *g* seemeth to be turned into *u*, so as it is sounded as if it were written *Counoistre*: some therefore write it *Connoistre*. Also *signe* and its derivatives are indifferently pronounced, *sine* or *signe*, *signifier* or *sinifier*, though *g* be ever written. Also in these words, *doigt*, and *vingt*, *g* is idle, saving onely to shew their Originall. At the end of words, not diphthonged, as *sang*, *rang*, *long*, *g* serves to make the syllable long: but in words diphthonged, it is not sounded, as *soing*, *loing*, *poing*, *besoing*; and in *batang*, which are often written *soin*, *loin*, &c.

H is mute, or loseth its aspiring sound in many words, especially come from the Latine, as *heure*, *honneste*, *homme*, *beur*, *heureux*, *heritier*, *helas*, *haleine*, *trahir*, *esbahir*; also in *huit*, *huitiesme*, *huitante*, and *huile*, with their derivatives, where *h* seemeth to have a peculiar sound, almost as *v*, as if it were written *vuit*, or after the English Orthographie *meet*: but in many other words, which are meer French, it is sounded with a strong aspiration, as *Hair*, *hannir*, *aban*, *abanner*, *hardy*, *hasard*, *honnir*, *harangue*, *hanter*. When *c* comes afore *h*, it is sounded as in *c* is shewed.

I is a consonant, when beginning a syllable it cometh afore a vowell, as *Faloux*, *jeune*, *joly*, and is pronounced as *g* before *e* or *i*, but nothing so hard as the English: which is good to be learned by the care.

L hath its naturall sound, saving in *sol* (for a peece of money called a *sou* &) pronounced *sou*: as for *col*, *licol*, *mol*, *fol*, which after the vulgar sort are pronounced *cou*, *mou*, &c. they are better pronounced as they are written; but *cul* soundeth not the *l*. Also *l* is nor pronounced after the diphthongs, *au*, *eu*, *ou*, nor afore *t*, *s*, or *z* in the same syllable, as *Heaulme*, *paulme*, *haut*, *faulx*, *veult*, *peult*, *couldre*, *mouldre*, *poulser*, *poulpitre*, *saoul*, *fls*, *ils*, *rels*: yet in *coulpe*, *poulpe*, and their derivatives, the *l* is sounded. Moreover, double *ll* after *ai*, *ei*, *i*, *eui*, *oui*, and *ui*, in the midst of words; and single *l* at the end of words, hath a liquid sound, by lightly touching with the tongue the roofe of the mouth (almost as in the English word *scullion*) the *i* not being sounded (or as if it were turned into *g*) but serving onely as a note of the said liquid sound; as *Travailler*, *veiller*, *faillir*, *cueillir*, *mouïller*, *broüiller*, *Fuillet*, &c. *viel*, *soleil*, *esmail*, *ail*, *esventail*, *babil*, *portail*, *peril*, *baril*, *accueil*, *cercueil*, *sommeil*, *resveil*, *verroüil*, &c. except heere *ville*, *mille*, *cavi l r*, *pupille*, *esloile*, which are sounded with one *l*; except also *il*, *fil*, *vil*, *util*, *subtil*, *viril*, *servil*, *ail* (in poesie) for *celuy*, *poil* and *mil* for number, which sound *l* plainly. The Italians in their *voglio*, and the like, and the Spaniards in their *llamar* come somewhat neer this liquifaction of *l*. And for your exercise, marke the difference of sound in these words, *Piller*, *piler*, *bailier*, *balier*, *saillir*, *salir*, *sueil*, *seul*, *vieille*, *vielle*, &c.

M at the end of words is weakly sounded as *n*, without closing the lips, as *faim*, *renom*.

N is not sounded at all in the third persons plurall of verbs ending in *ent*, as *aiment*, *donnent*, which sound *imet*, *doonet*.

P, in some words come from the Latine, and at end of words, is pronounced, as *Presomption*, *optior*, *precepte*,

precepte, hanap, coup, galop, septante, septentrion, adoption, soupçon: but in many other words, betweene two consonants, and sometimes afore one, is not sounded, as Compter, corps, temps, champs, nepveu, niece, sept, je romps, dompter, baptiser, and their derivatives; also in these plurals, draps, hanaps, sirops, camps, coups, nopces, and the like.

R single is gently sounded, as *guere*; but doubled, strongly, with prolonging the syllable, as *guerre*, *terre*.

S betweene two vowels is sounded as *z*, as *Cause*, *chose*, *maison*; also in these words, *prinse*, *tinse*, and their derivatives, and makes the syllable afore it long, so it be not an *e* feminine, which is ever short, as in these words, *peser*, *gesir*, *mesure*, and the like: except from this rule those compounds whose simples begin with *s*, as *Ensaluer*, *reserrer*, *ressembler*, which sound it strongly. This letter is written in many words where it is not sounded, and is there but to lengthen the syllable, as *Ecrire*, which may be written (as by some it is) *écrire*. But to know where this letter *s* is to be pronounced, and where not, observe these rules: First, *s* is sounded in all compounds with these inseparable prepositions; *As*, *abs*, *cons*, *dis*, *ins*, *post*, *prof*, *obs*, *subs*, *sus*, *trans*, *res*; as *Astraindre*, *abstenir*, *disputer*, *constant*, *substance*, *suspect*, *transcrire*, &c. excepting hence *Respondre*, *respendre*, *resver*, *resverie*, *resveil*, *resveiller*, *respit*, *retablir*, which sound it not. Secondly, words beginning with *Es*, commonly sound not *s*, as *Ecrire*, *escorre*, *espouffeter*, *estudier*, &c. except *Esperer*, *espoir*, *esperance*, *Espagne*, *espace*, *espece*, *estase*, *estame*, *estamine*, *estamell-cloth*, but not for *Tamic-stuffe*; *estropier*, *estropiat*, *estrapade*, *estradiot*, *estrade*, *estimer*, *esprit*, *espion*, *estoc*, *estocade*, *estasier*, all which pronounce the *s*. Thirdly, *s* is pronounced when it commeth afore *c* sounded hard, *qu*, or *g*, as *Esclandre*, *risque*, *escabeau*, *escamper*,

escamper, *escarbillat*, *escarbot*, *escargot*, *escarlatin* (but not *escarlata*) *escarpins*, *escarcelle*, *escalade*, *escarre*, *escopetterie*, *escorne* for *scorne* or *shame*, *Escoüade*, *esquadron*, *esquiver*, *birrasque*, *Basque*, *Biscaye*, *biscuit*, *bosquet*, *brusque*, *busquer*, *casque*, *contrescarpe*, *crotesque*, *damasquiner*; *debusquer*, *ambuscade*, *frisque*, *jusques*, *jusqu'ame*, *lanfquenet*, *masque*, *mosquet*, *mosquee*, *musc*, *muscles*, *obelisque*, *pasquil*, *presque*: except *Pasque*, *Esvesque*, *esclat*, *escart*, *escouter*, *esclair*, *esclairer*, *esquierre*, *esquarrer*, and some others which follow the second rule above given in not pronouncing *s*. Fourthly, the *s* is sounded in such as come from Latine words in *sto*, *stis*, *stus*, *stis*, as *Persister*, *peste*, *modeste*, *contester*, *triste*, *illustre*, &c. except *Prestes* and its compounds: yet *prestation* soundeth *s*. Fifthly, it is pronounced in all proper names, as *Auguste*; except in these, *Basle*, *Cresspin*, *Escosse*, *Hierosme*, which omit it. Sixthly, it is sounded in words signifying the fashion of peoples, à *la Moresque*, after the Moorish fashion, *Greguesque*, &c. And moreover, *s* is pronounced in these words following, and some others come from the Latine; *Accoster*, signifying to approach, but not when it is to prop up, *Annaliste*, *Apostre*, *Apostolique*, but not in *Apostre*, *Apostume*, *Artiste*, *Asperges*, and *Asperger*, *Astres*. *Attester*, *Baster* to suffice, but not *Baster* to put on a pack-saddle. *Bastille* *Bastion*, *Bastonnade*, but not in *Baston*, *Bestialité*, & *Bestiole*, but not in *Bestail*, *Beste*, nor *Bestelette*. *Blasphemer*, *Caneriste*. *Caustique*. *Celeste*. *Chasteté*. *Circonstance*. *Cisternes*. *Clistere*. *Desastre*. *Desesperer*. *Enregistrer*. *Evangeliste*. *Festin*, but not in *Feste*. *Gastadour*. *Gaspiller*, *Gestes*. *Herboriste*. *Histoire*. *Improviste*. *Inceste*. *Instant*. *Inspirer*. *Investiture*, but not in *Vestir*. *Furiste*. *Justice*. *Legiste*. *Liste*. *Limestre*. *Leste*. *Lustre*. *Mastic*. *Menstrual*. *Ministre*. *Miste*. *Moleste*. *Monstre*, a Monster, but not for a Muster. *Moustache*. *Moustele*. *Nonobstant*. *Ostade*. *Pensioniste*. *Pastel*,

Pastel, Pastorelle, not in *Pastoureaux* and *Paistre*. *Pastenades*. *Poste*. *Pistean*. *Postillon*. *Postille*. *Question*. *Reste*. *Rustre*. *Rustaud*. *Sequestre*. *Sinistre*, not *Senestre*. *Tempestif*, not in *Tempeste*. *Tester*. *Testament*. *Teston*. *Tessonner*. *Vestiaire*. *Vistempenard*.

T afore *i*, in words come from the Latine, is sounded as *ç* or *s*, as *Ambition*, *seditieux* : except in *Amitié*, *inimitié*, *pitié*, *moitié*. Further, *th* is pronounced onely *t*, as *Atheïste*. Also in words ending in *ts* it is not sounded, as *un rets*, *des mots* : and in this little word *Et* it is neuer pronounced. Lastly, in the third person singular of verbs ending with a vowell, when *il*, *elle*, or *on* do follow, though no *t* bee seene, yet must one bee (between the verb and them) pronounced : *Fera-il* ? *Dira-on* ? as if it were written *Feratil* ? *Diraton* ? which is sometime discerned by this conjunctive note—.

V is a consonant when it comes afore a vowell, or afore an *r* in the same syllable, as *verité*, *vray*, *courvir* : in which last word, the first *u* is a vowell, the other a consonant.

X, in words come of the Latine, keepeth its sound, as *Perplex*, *expedier*, *example*, and in these meere French words, *Exploit*, *exploiter*. Otherwise at end of words it is pronounced as *s*, or in the midst between two vowels, as *x* ; *Dix*, *maux*, *heureux*, *sixiesme*, *deuxiesme* : except in *Soixante*, *lexive*, in which it is sounded as *ss*, thus, *soissante*, &c.

Pronunciation of Diphthongs and Triphthongs.

TWo or three vowels together, making but one sound or syllable, are called diphthongs or triphthongs.

Ai, or *Ay* is commonly pronounced as the open *e*, or *é* masculine : as *Fay*, *mais*, *paix*, *faire* : which reade
jé

jé, més, pés, fère. From this rule are these exceptions:

1. When it commeth afore a vowell, as *Aye*, *ayons*, *ayant*; where it hath its naturall sound: as if you said, *A-i-ons*, or *a-y-ant*; yet making them but two syllables.
2. Also when it commeth afore *m* or *n* (without an *e* following) as *Main*, *faim*: which is sounded somewhat broadly, almost as the English do *y* or *i*, in *lyme*, *mine*, and the like. But note, that when an *e* followeth the said *n*, it is sounded *é*, as *laine*, *haine*.
3. Except when it commeth afore *ll* in the midst, or single *l* at the end of words: as *Bailler*, *travail*, as also afore *gn*: as *Compaignie*, *Allemaigne* (as some doe write them) where onely *a* is sounded, the *i* serving but for a signe of liquifying the *l* or *gn*, as in those letters is shewed.

Ao is sounded either by omitting the *a*, as in *saoul*, which reade *sou*; or by omitting the *o*, as in *Paon*, *faon*, *taon*; which sound *Pân*, *fân*, *tân*, long: yet in *Paonner*, *faonner*, both letters are pronounced.

An is ever sounded *o*, as *Pauvre*, *haut*, *chevaux*; which reade *Pe-ure*, *hôt*, *chevô's*: but if a vowell or *r* follow the *v*, then is it a consonant: as *avoir*, *hivre*.

Ea soundeth both letters in *Peage*, *peageurs*, but not in the word *Dea*, for which say *da*.

Eau sound *eo*; as *Peau*, *beauté*: it is separated into two syllables in the word *Héaume*.

Ei afore the syllables *ne*, *se*, *ze*, is sounded as *é* masculine: as *Peine*, *treize*: except afore *n* without *e* after it: as *plein*, which soundeth both. Also *ei* in these, *vei*, *fei*, and their derivatives, is pronounced as if they were written *vi*, *fi*, or as the English *ee*.

Eoi is but *oi*; as *veoir*, or *voir*, of which anon.

Eu soundeth both, as *heur*, or as the English do *u* in the preterperfect tenses of verbes; as *veu*, *peu*. It is not a diphthong, when *a* followeth *u*, but the *u* becommeth a consonant; as *evader*: the like when it comes afore *r* in many

The French Tutor.

13

many words : as *Deuray*, *receuray*, *fièvre*, *lévre*, *lièvre*, *bièvre* : but in *Meilleur*, *seur*, &c. it is a diphthong.

Eui, *iei*, *uei*, *oui*, *œi*, are sounded *eu*, *ie*, *ou*, *æ*, without pronouncing the last *i*, which comming afore *ll* or *l*, serveth but to make the *l* liquid ; as *recueil*, or *recueil*, *viel*, *moûiller*, *œil*.

Ie expresseth both vowels joynly : as *pied*, *soulier* : yet *ie* is sometimes separated into two syllables ; first, in words ending in *e* feminine : as *amie*. Secondly, in the Infinitive mood of verbes in *ier* : as *prier*. Thirdly, in names of Nation and of Art ending in *ien* : as *Italien*, *Musicien*.

Ieu soundeth all mixt into one ; as *Teux*, *mieux*, *lieux* : but it is divided into two syllables, in Adjectives in *eux*, come from Latins in *osus* : as *Gracieux*, *curieux* ; and in words come of verbes, whose Infinitives end in *ier* : as *Prieur*, *crieur*.

Io is onely a diphthong in the first person plurall of verbs : as *Aimions*.

Oi and *Oy* is sounded *oo* or *æ* : as *foy*, *trois*. But afore *n*, as *oindre*, it hath its owne sound.

Oeu sound *eu* ; as *œuf*, *cœur*, *sœur*.

Ou is sounded as the English *oo* in *brood*, *moone*, and the like : as *Pour vous nous mourons tous* : for your sake we die all.

Oie or *Oye*, is no triphthong, save onely in the third persons plurall of verbs : as *Aimoient*, which sound as *oy*, but long.

Ui or *uy*, lively soundeth both the vowells in one syllable : as *luy*, *nuict*.

Of Orthography, quantitie of Syllables,
and of Accents.

THough we have already, in the pronounciation given sufficient light for learning the Orthographie ; yet these few notes (given by some) are not to be contemned.

The

1 The most part of strange words come from the Latine and Greek, do retaine (howsoever pronounced) their owne Orthographie : as *Philosophe*, *Chirurgien*, *lièr*, *faièr* : and not as the Italians *Filosofo*, *letto*, *fatto*.

2 Syllables are not distinguished by the number of letters : for though most of them consist of two or three letters ; yet some be of 4 or 5, or more , as *Dieux*, *cieulx*.

3 Nounes come from Latine words in *ofus*, in French doe end in *eux* ; as, *odieux*, of *odiosus*.

4 There bee many words differ little or nothing in pronounciation , but much in writting and signification, as these : *Sain*, sound, and *Sein* a bosome. *Laid*, foule, and *Laièr*, milke. *Grace*, grace, and *Grasse* fatt. *Pescher*, to fish, and *Pecher*, to sinne. *Sans*, without , and *Sens*, the sense. *Vaine*, vaine, and *Veine*, a veine. *Faix*, a burden, and *Fais*, doest. *Sœur*, a sister, and *Seur*, sure. *Saint*, holy ; and *Ceintèr*, girt. *D'eux*, of them ; and *Deux*, two. *Maistre*, Maister ; and *Mettre*, to put. *Quand*, when ; & *Quant à*, as for. *Selle*, a saddle ; and *Celle*, shee, her, or that. *Nom*, a name ; and *Non*, not, or no. *Se*, himselfe, or it selfe ; and *Ce*, this. *Pois*, pease, *Poids*, weight ; and *Poix*, pitch. *Compte*, a reckoning, *Comte*, an Earle ; and *Conte*, a tale. *Point*, not, *Pointèr*, a point ; and *Poing*, a fist. *Mais*, but, *Mets*, a dish of meate ; and *Mes*, my. *Ville*, a citie or towne ; and *Vile*, base.

For the quantitie of syllables , observe first , that the last syllable, or last save one, is with the French, for the most part, accented or made long in pronounciation ; as *Magie*, *apres*.

2 Every vowell afore *m* or *n* , joyned with another consonant , is long : as *Santé*, *endormir*.

3 The syllable comming next afore *e* feminine , is ever long : as *Dragée*, *magie*, *tuë*, *voye*, *caille*, *symbole*, *loüable*, &c.

4. The syllable next afore *é* masculine, whether the same *é* be accented, or before *r* or *z*, unaccented, is for the most part short: as *Tuër, tué, tuëz*.

5. The diphthong *au* is long, as *autrement*.

6. All verbes ending in *a*, *as*, and *ast*, have that syllable long: as *Aima, aimas, aimast*.

7. Words ending in *os*, have the same long: as *Propos, dispos, repos*.

8. Whensoever a letter is not sounded, the syllable afore it is long: as *Teste, Mastin*; which putteth a difference betweene them and *Tete, matin*.

The acute accent is never used, but over *é* masculine: the grave accent is used over *Là* the Adverbe of place, to distinguish it from *La* the feminine article or pronoun; and over *Où* the Adverbe of place, to distinguish it from *Ou* the disjunctive; and over *à* the article or preposition, to distinguish it from the verbe *a*, hath.

Apostrophus is a note or signe of a letter wanting, and supplied by this mark (') and is used especially in Monosyllables in *e*, such as *Je, me, te, se, de, ne, que, le, ce, and la*; as *J'ayme* for *Je ayme*, *l'ame* for *la ame*; and in the conjunction *si* afore *il*, as *s'il, s'ils*; and in verse sometimes *s'elle, s'elles, s'on, s'ainsi*, for *si elle, si elles, si on, si ainsi*; also in the Prepositions *entre* and *contre* in composition, as *Contr'opposer, entr'ouyr, entr'ouvrir*: also in *ma, ta, sa, and mon, ton, son*, as *m'amie m'amour, t'amie t'amour, s'amie s'amour*, for *mon amie mon amour, ton amie ton amour, son amie son amour*: also when a syllable is cut off by Syncope, as *ſça'vous* for *ſçavez vous*? and the like.

Two points .. over a vowell are sometimes set, either to shew the same vowell not to bee (mistaken for) a consonant, as *Moëlle*; or that the same is to be divided from a vowell aforegoing, as *queue, naïf, réiterer, réunir, jouïr*; which reade *ken-e*, &c.

The conjunctive note is a short division-line between two words founded together as one ; as *Porte-faix, di-je, que fait-il ?*

As for the points and distinction of periods, marks of interrogation, parenthesis, admiration, &c. the use of the Latine is to be followed.

CHAP. II.

Of the Articles.

AN Article (after some Authors) is a declinable part of speech, wherby other parts, to wit, Nouns, Pronounes, and Participles (otherwise of themselves undeclinable) are declined, and their Genders, Numbers, and Cases knowne : although in truth these onely, *le, la, les*, doe seeme to be Articles, and the other Prepositions rather.

The ordinary declining or distribution of them is thus :

The definite Articles.

Masc. Gender. Fem. Gender.

Sing.	{	Nom. Accusat.	<i>Le.</i>	<i>la, the.</i>
		Gen. Ablat.	<i>Du, de l'.</i>	<i>de la, of the, &c.</i>
		Dative.	<i>Au, à l'.</i>	<i>à la, to the, &c.</i>

Common Gender.

Plur.	{	<i>Les,</i>	<i>the.</i>
		<i>Des,</i>	<i>of the, from the, with the.</i>
		<i>aux, és,</i>	<i>to the, at the, in the.</i>

Note, that *de l'*, and *à l'* are both of the Masculine and Feminine Genders, and are set before Nounes beginning with a vowell, or *h* mute, to avoid gaping, as *de l'encre, à l'homme.*

The Indefinite Articles being of the Common Gender, and of both Numbers.

Nomin.

Nomin. Accus. without an Article; but in English the Article *a* or *an*.

Genit. Ablat. *De*, of, from, with; or of *a*, from *a*, with *a*, or *an*.

Dative, *à*, to, at, for, or to *a*, at *a*, for *a*, or *an*.

Hence you see, that the French have but three distinct cases, the Nominative and Accusative being both one, and the Genitive and Ablative.

The definite Articles (called by some finite) doe denote a certain definite or limited thing; and have the force to collect, restrain, or bound the universall or generall signification of words (which they have of themselves) to a strict sense, applied to one alone, as the English also doe by their Article *The*; as *J'ay vu le Roy*; *Je suis serviteur du Roy*, *j'ay parlé au Roy*; I have seene the King, I am servant of the King, I have spoken to the King; meaning one certain King onely, as the King of England, or some one King (haply) before, or immediately after spoken of.

On the contrary, the indefinite Articles binde not to any particular subject, but leave their termes to their unbounded generality; as, *Celui est vray Roy qui regne par justice*, he is a true King which reigneth by justice. *Il promet en foy de Roy de garder équitè*, he promised in the faith of a King to maintaine equity. *Il appartient à Roy de regir ses sujets comme pere*, it belongs to a King to rule his subjects as a father.

So, when we speake of a whole integrall body, wee speak indefinitely, using the Article *un*, or the Pronoun *quelque*; as first, of Substances, as *un Roy* a King, *quelque Roy* some King, *une espée* a sword, &c. Secondly, of qualites adhering to Substances, as *une peine* a peine, *un soucy* a care, *une chaleur* a heat, *quelque soin* some care, &c. Now in this sense, speaking of these in the plurall number, wee apply *des* before the Substantives, and *De* before Adjectives preceding those Substantives,

as *Des Rois* Kings, *de bons Rois* good Kings, *des soucis* cares, *de poignans soucis* pricking cares.

The use of definite Articles.

1. Contrariwise, when wee speake of things (as it were) by parts, portions, or a quantity of them, we use the definite Articles; and that is, first, when we speake of substances, retaining the name of the whole, as *Du pain* bread, or some bread; *du vin*, wine, or some wine; *de la toile*, linnen cloth, or some linnen cloth. Secondly, when we speake of qualities adhering to those substances, or lying in the action of the understanding, as *De la chaleur*, heat, or some heat; *de la blancheur*, whitenesse, or some whitenesse; *du froid*, cold, or some cold; *de la peine*, paine, or some paine; *du plaisir*, pleasure, or some pleasure; *de l'esprit*, wit, some wit. And in these phrases and sense these Articles have not onely place in the Genitive or Ablative Cases, but also in the Nom. Accus. and Dative, by means of the Article *à*: as *C'est de l'argent*, it is money, or some money; *versez du vin*, fill some wine, *ceste liqueur ressemble à du vin*, this liquour is like to wine, *j'ay employé mes deniers à du blé*, I have imployed my money in corne, *à de la marchandise*, in merchandise, *j'ay veu des Gentils-hommes*, I have seen some Gentlemen, *j'ay communiqué mon affaire à des Docteurs*, I have communicated my businesse to some Doctors, or to Doctors.

But when in these phrases the Adjectives are set and construed before the Substantives, then in stead of *du*, *de l'*, *de la* and *des*, it is better to use *de*, as *de bon vin* good wine, *de fine soye* fine silke, *de belle estoffe* faire stuffe, *de braves Gentils-hommes* brave Gentlemen, *de sçavans Docteurs* skilfull Doctors.

So then you see, that many substances may be taken integrally, as *un blé*, meaning a corn-field, *un bois*
a whole

a whole forest, *une paille* a straw, *un bœuf* an ox, or beefe, *un mouton* a sheep or whole mutton; and divisibly into parts, *du blé* some corn, *du bois* wood, or some wood; *de la paille* straw, or some straw; *du bœuf* beef, or some beefe; *du mouton* mutton, or some mutton.

2 When we speake of the members of the body, following the Latine Syntax, in stead of the possessives (which the English would use) we must use the definite articles, as *la teste me fait mal*, my head is ill; or *akes; un tel est blessé à la teste*, such a one is hurt on his head; and not say *ma teste*, *à sa teste*.

3 The definite Articles are let afore words importing action or exercise, as *Addonné au jeu*, given to play or gaming: *il aime le jeu de la paume*, he loves tennis-play: *nous devisons du jeu de la paume*, we talke of tennis-play: *nous nous exerçons au jeu de la paume*, we exercise our selves in tennis-play: *joüer aux dez*, *à la boule*, *aux eschez*; to play at dice, at bowls, at chess; *courir la bague*, to run at ring; *aller le trot*, or *au trot*, to trot; *aller le galop*, or *au galop*, to galop.

But the manner of the play or action requires the indefinite Article *à*, as *Sauter à joints pieds*, to leap with the feet close together: *courir à bride avallée*, to run with the bridle on the horse necke: except these, *courir la poste*, to ride poste: *tirer des armes*, to fence or handle his weapons: *enseigner la musique*, to teach musique: *tailler la pierre*, to cut or carve stone; and in like manner, their Nouns verbals will have the indefinite Article, as *Coureur de poste*, a rider of poste: *tireur d'armes*, a Fencer: *enseigneur de musique*, a teacher of musique: *tailleur de pierre*, a stone-cutter: *un faiseur d'habits*, a maker of apparell.

4 Every partative speech, or comparative taken partatively, is made by the definite Articles applied to the thing, as *Ceste Dame est la fleur des belles*, this Lady is the flower of faire ones: *Les leçons du plus sçavant*
C 2 homme

homme de l'université, the lectures of the skilfullest man in the Universitie, *J'ay baillé mon ouvrage à faire au plus excellent ouvrier de la ville*, I have given my worke to be done to the, or by the best workman of the city.

5 When we put the name of the speciall kinde for the whole kinde, it is a definitive speech, requiring the definite Articles; as *L'homme a esté créé à l'image de Dieu*, man was created after the image of God: *La femme a esté baillée à l'homme pour ayde*, woman was given to man for an help: *les boüillons de la colere en l'homme produisent de perilleux effects*, the boilings of choler in man produce dangerous effects: *Le cheval est propre à la guerre, comme le bœuf au labourage*, the horle is fit for warre, as the ox for the plough: *la propriété du Laurier est contre le tonnerre*, the property of the bay-tree is against thunder: *On attribüe une merveillease propriété à la palme, de se roidir contre le faix*, a wonderfull property is attributed to the palme-tree, to resist the more it is pressed with weight: *On doute lequel est plus dommageable, ou profitable l'or, ou le fer*; it is doubted, which is more hurtfull or profitable of gold or iron: *la gueule en perd plus que le glaive*, the throat (that is, surfet) destroyeth more than the sword.

6 Also, when wee set before proper names some Epithet or Adjective, the definite Article is set before the Epithet, as *La statuë du Dictateur Cesar, qui fit la guerre au grand Pompée*, the statue of the Dictator Cesar, who warred on the great Pompey. But if we set after the proper name an Epithet or Adjective bearing note of speciall prerogative or preeminence, then the indefinite Article is set before the proper name, and the definite *le*, *la* after it, before the Epithet, as *la statuë de Cesar le Dictateur, qui fit la guerre à Pompée le Grand*, the statue of Cesar the Dictator, who made warre on Pompey the Great.

7 Likewise, these phrases are emphaticall, *Cesar le Dictateur*

Dictateur, *Pompée le Grand*, that is, which was the Dictator, which had the title of Great. Which must be noted: for when the Adjective hath not any such emphasis, but a common quality, and simple attribute, there needeth not the definite Article, as *Alexandre jeune & vaillant*, *desconfit en bataille Darius tres-puissant Roy de Perse*; Alexander being young and valiant, discomfitteth in battell Darius the most mighty King of Persia. *Monsieur*, *Madame*, *Mademoiselle*, doe follow that emphaticall construction; as *Monsieur le Duc*, my Lord Duke; *Madame la Comtesse*, my Lady Countesse; *Monsieur le sot*, master sot; *Madame la putain*, Madame, or mistresse whore.

8 Lastly, when any Epithet is added to this name *Dieu*, before or after, the definite Article is used, as *J'adore le vray Dieu*, I worship the true God: *le monde est l'ouvrage du Dieu fort*, the world is the workmanship of the strong God: *J'adresse mes prières au Dieu vivant*, I direct my prayers to the living God: so *l'Idole du Dieu Jupiter*. Also the word *seul*, set before *Dieu*, requires the definite Articles, as *le seul Dieu*, the onely God, *du seul Dieu*, of the onely God, *au seul Dieu*, to the onely God: but if *seul* come after, then use the indefinite, as *Dieu seul*, God alone, *de Dieu seul*, of God alone, *à Dieu seul*, to God alone,

The use of indefinite Articles.

First, they are used before proper names, as *La statue de Cesar qui fit la guerre au grand Pompée*, the statue of Cesar that made warre against Pompey: *l'homme est l'image de Dieu*, man is the image of God: *Adressez à Dieu vos prières*, direct to God your prayers. And this Rule is generall; that all proper names of men, months, Cities, Kingdomes, &c. and all attributes proper to one sole individuall, are construed with the indefinite Ar-

ticles, as *Le Roy d'Angleterre*, *d'Espagne*, the King of England, of Spaine. *Je viens de Paris*, I come from Paris. *Je suis de Londres*, I am of London, &c. Except some phrases, as when we say, *Par* or *parmy l'Europe*, *l'Asie*, *la France*, *l'Italie*, through or amidst Europe, Asia, France, Italie; also *à la France*, *à l'Europe*, to France, to Europe; and indifferently, *les villes de la France*, or *de France*, the cities of France. Also we say, *Le Tybre*, the river Tyber; *le Rhin*, the Rhine; *le Pau*, l'o; *le Danube*, Danubius; *le Nil*, Nilus; and indifferently *Tamise* or *la Tamise*, the Thames. also *l'Apenin*, *les Alpes*, *les Pyrenées*, the Apenine, Alps, Pyrenean mountains.

Secondly, indefinite Articles serve to Appellatives left in their generall signification, without any restriction; and that in phrases generally negative, or interrogative, or conditionall, having ordinarily following them *Aucun*, *quelconque*, or some other equivalent to these; *Je n'ay secours d'aucun homme*, or *d'homme qui soit*, I have no helpe of any man, *d'homme quelconque*, of any man whatsoever, *d'homme vivant*, of any man living. *Trouvez vous apparence quelconque en ce propos?* Finde you any likelihood at all in this speech? *Je ne sçay si je trouveray amy quelconque*, I know not whether I shall finde any friend at all. *Si vous avez besoin de chose que je puisse*, *ne m'espargnez pas*, if you have need of any thing that I can doe, spare me not, &c.

Thirdly, these indefinite Articles are used with all Pronounes whatsoever, except the Possessives *Mien*, *sien*, *sien*; and *nostre*, *vostre*, *leur*, when they are absolute; and the Relative *lequel*, whose Article is inseparable:

The particle *en* a (which some reckon among the Articles) may indifferently be used or not used in such phrases,

phrases, *Celuy est vray Roy*, or *un vray Roy*, *qui regit comme pere*, he is a true King, who ruleth as a Father. *De long travail*, or *d'un long travail*, *heureuse recompence*; of a long labour, a happy recompence.

Masculine, Feminine.

Sing.	{	Nom. Accus. <i>un, une</i> : a, an.
		Gen. Ablat. <i>d'un, d'une</i> : of a, or an; from a, or an; with a, or an.
		Dative <i>à un, à une</i> : to a, or an; at a, or an; for a, or an.

Strangers, both English and others, doe often falsely use the Articles; namely,

False Articles. True ones.

De le, is falsely used for	{	<i>Du</i> before Consonants, as <i>du pain</i> , some bread, <i>du drap</i> , some cloth.
		<i>De l'</i> before vowels, as <i>de l'œil</i> , of the eye, <i>de l'or</i> , of gold, or some gold.
à le, falsely for	{	<i>Au</i> before Consonants, as <i>au Roy</i> , to the King, <i>au Chateau</i> , to the castle.
		<i>à l'</i> before vowels, as <i>à l'œil</i> , <i>à l'homme</i> , to the eye, to man.
en le, falsely for	{	<i>au, dans le, dedans le</i> before Consonants, as <i>au feu</i> , in the fire.
		<i>en l', dans l', dedans l'</i> , before Vowels, as <i>en l'hostel</i> , in the house.

Des les falsely, for *des*, as *la pudicité des femmes*, the chastity of women.

À les falsely for *aux* or *és*, as *aller aux jardins*, to go into the garden: *se promener és jardins*, to walke in the gardens.

En les, falsely for *aux* and *és*, *dans les, dedans les*, as *dans les livres, és livres*, in books.

Use the true, and avoid the false. You shall finde more of Articles in particular, in the Syntax.

C H A P.

CHAP. III.

Of a Noun.

NOunes are either Substantives ; as *Homme*, *Femme*, *Roy*, *Royne* : or adjectives ; as *Prudent*, *prudente*, *Vertueux*, *vertueuse*.

Nounes have onely three Genders, Masculine, Feminine, and Common : for the knowledge of which Genders, observe the rules following :

1. All Nounes Adjectives which only end in *e* feminine, are of the common gender, that is to say, are applicable to substantives, as well of the masculine as of the feminine gender: for neuter, the French have not, but comprehend it under the masculine. Of these, a very great number doe come from Latine Adjectives, of which some in *ilis*; as *Facile*, *utile*, *docile*, *fertile*, *sterile*, *aimable*, *amiable*, *humble*, *lisible*, *possible*, *delectable*, *affable*, *redevable*, *recevable*, &c. some in *bris*, *stis*, *stus*, *stis*: as *Funebre*, *celebre*, *triste*, *modeste*, *celeste*, *chaste*, *juste*, *illustre*, &c. some in *us*, *dis* : as *Humide*, *solide*, *rude*, *roide*, *vuide*, *palle*, *superbe*, &c. some in *plex* : as *Simple*, *double*, *triple*, *quadruple*, and so forth to *centuple* ; also *souple* : some in *lis*, *lus* : as *Fidèle*, *rebelle*, *imbecille* : in *aris*, *arius* : as *Militaire*, *remeraire*, *ordinaire*, *vulgaire*, *contraire*, &c. some in *icus* : as *Publicque*, *anticque*, *pudique*, &c. whose masculine may also indifferently be in *ic*, or *icq* : as *Politique*, *pudic*, &c. some in *er* and *rus* ; as *Acre*, *aigre*, *maigre*, *alaigre*, *salubre*, *mortifère*, *pestifère*, *alexitére*, *deletère*, *propre*, *sobre*, *libre*, *yvre*, *pauvre*, *aspre*, *prossere*, *adultere*, *sincere*, *severe*, *avare*, *rare*, *ignare* : some in *mus*, *mis* : as *Extreme*, *intims*, *ferme*, *infrme*, *sublime*, *quantième*, *deuxième*, *troisième*, &c. infinitely ; and *Miste*, *artiste*, *sophiste*, *athciste*, *donatiste*, *legiste*, &c. and others of diverse formes : as *Lasche*, *morne*, *sombre*, *terne*, *borgne*, *bicle*, or *bicle*, *aveugle*, *jeune*, *sage*, *feible*, *trouble*,

trouble, *comble*, *blesme*, *riche*, *chiche*, *proche*, *croche*,
courbe, *sale*, *louche*, *viste*, *lesce*, *yvrongne*, *fantasque*,
moite, *mince*, *colere*, *maussade*, *fade*, *malade*, *grave*,
brave, &c.

Also of the common gender are all the cardinall numbers from *deux*, *trois*, &c. infinitely.

The second sort of Adj. ctives, are such as have two terminations; the one masculine, the other feminine: them of the masculine, are ever one of these, *Eau*, *c*, *d*, *é*, *f*, *g*, *i*, *l*, *n*, *r*, *s*, *t*, *u*, *x*, *y*.

Such as end in *eau*, do forme their feminines in *elle*; as *Beau*, *belle*, *Gemeau*, or *jumeau*, *gemelle*, or *jumelle*, *nouveau*, *nouvelle*: & these also afore substantives beginning with a vowell, have the masculines in *el*; as *Bel œil*, a fair eye, *Nouvel ouvrage*, a new worke.

Such as end in *C* have their feminines in *che*, as *Sec*, *seiche*. *Blanc*, *blanche*. *Franc*, *franche*: except *Flac*, *flaque*. *Grec*, *grecque*. *Porc*, *porcque*, and such as end in *ic*, as *Rustic*, *Rustique*, &c.

In *d* taketh *e* to it: as *Grand*, *grande*. *Rond*, *ronde*, *Froid*, *froide*, &c. Except *Nud*, *nuë*.

In *é* taketh also *e*, as *Aimé*, *aimée*. *Donné*, *donnée*.

In *f* doe change the same into *ve*, as *Vif*, *vive*, or (after some) *Vifve*; *veuf*, *veuve*, or *veufve*. *Neuf* *neuve*. *Grief*, *griève*. *Brief*, *briève*. *Souëf*, *souëve*, &c. Here note the difference betweene *Neuf* and *Nouveau*; that *Neuf* is said of things newly made by art, and not yet put to use, as *des souliers neufs*, new shooes; *une maison neuve*, a new house. *Nouveau* is said of things when they first come to evidence, or shew themselves, as *Des fruits nouveaux*, new fruits; *du vin nouveau*, new wine; *une nouvelle façon d'habits*, a new fashion of apparell; *un livre nouveau*, a new booke.

In *g*, as *long*, *longue*.

In *i* and *y* they take *e*, as *Joly*, *jolie*, *amy amie*, *nourry* *nourrie*, *flory* *florie*.

In *L* commonly adde to *le*, as *Gentil*, *gentille*. *Vermeil*, *vermeille*. *Pareil*, *pareille* : yet where *l* is not liquid, a single *l* may serve ; as *General*, *generale*. *Eternel*, *eternelle*, &c. except *Tel*, *telle*. *Quel*, *quelle*.

In *n*, such as are in *on*, adde to *ne*, as *Bon*, *bonne*. *Felon*, *felonne*. *Mignon*, *mignonne* : the others double not the *n*, as *Chrestien*, *Chrestienne*. *Certain*, *certaine*. *Benin*, *benigne*. *Fin*, *fine*. *Plein*, *pleine*. *Mien*, *miene*, &c.

In *S*, when *i* comes afore it, adde to *e*, as *Gris*, *grise*. *Bis*, *bise*. *Niais*, *niaise*. *Mauvais*, *mauvaise* : except *Frais*, *fraische*. *Espais*, *espaisse*. *Lis*, *lise*, and *lisse*. When another vowell commeth before it, the *s* is doubled : as *Bas*, *basse*. *Gras*, *grasse*. *Gros*, *grosse*. *Expres*, *expresse* : except *Ras*, *rase*, and all the participles, as *Clos*, *close*, &c.

In *T*, such as are in *et*, doe commonly double the *t*, as *Net*, *nette*. *Complet*, *complete*, the other terminations have but a single *t*, as *Prudent*, *Prudente*. *Estroit*, *estroite*. *Subit*, *subite*. *Sot*, *sote*. *Hault*, *haulte*, &c.

In *u*, taketh *e* to it, as *Pointu*, *pointuë*. *Velu*, *veluë*, so *aiguë*, *menuë*, *fueilluë*, &c.

In *X*, it is changed into *se*, as *Heureux*, *heureuse*, *jaloux*, *jalouse* ; Except *Doux* *douce*, *faux* *fauce*, or *fausse*, *roux* *rousse* or *rouce*, *perplex* *perplexe*.

Many substantives masculine doe forme from them others feminine, according to the rules aforegoing of adjectives, as *Cousin* *Cousine*, *Voisin* *voisins*, *Conseiller* *conseillere*, *Marchand* *marchande*, *Mercier*, *merciere*, *François*, *Françoise*, *Anglois*, *Angloise*, *Chien* *chienne*, *Lyon*, *Lyonne*, *Puceau*, *pucelle*, *Macquereau*, *Macquerelle*, *Nourrisson* *nourrissone*, used both actively and passively, *Nourrice* onely actively, and *Nourricier*, *nourriciere* actively, &c. which also serve for adjectives if occasion serve, as *Ville marchande*, a marchant towne.

Also such as end in *Eur*, are formed diversly, as into *cusse*,

cuisse, esse, ice, &c as *Menteur menteuse & menteresse, Demandeur demandeur & demanderesse, Sauveur sauveuse sauveresse, Pêcheur pecheresse, Flateur flateuse, Procureur procurese & procuratrice, Tuteur, tutrice, Protecteur, protectrice, Inventeur inventrice, Curateur curatrice, Dominateur dominatrice, Empereur Imperatrice & emperière; also Pricur prieure, Serviteur servante, Gouverneur gouvernante.*

Such as end in *e*, commonly change it into *esse*, as *Maître maistresse, Hôte hostesse, Prince Princessse, Comte Comtesse, Prestre prestresse, Moine moinesse, Abbé Abbesse*; and though *yvrongne, borgne*, and *belistre* be common, yet we say also *yvrongnesse, borgnesse, belistresse* for the feminine; also we forme *Clerc, clergesse, Duc Duchesse, Larron larronne and larronesse, Dieu deesse*. Moreover we forme *Roy Royne and Reine, Loup louve, Renard renarde, &c.*

But the females of some beastes, have not their names formed from them of their males, as *Cheval* an horse, *jument* or *carvale* a mare, *hongre*, a gelded horse, *guldin* an English guelding, *poulin* or *poulain* a colt; *Cerf* a stagge, *Biche* a hinde; *Sanglier* a wilde Bore, *Laye* a wild sow, *Marcaassin* a grice or young bore; *Verrat* a tame boare, *truye* a sow, *Porc* or *porceau*, a hogge, *cochon* a pig, and *coche*, a sow-pigge, or sometime a sow suckling her pigs; *Bouc*, a he-goate, *Chevre*, a she-goate, *Chevreau*, a kid; *Belier*, a ramme, *ouaille* or *brebis*, an ewe, *aigneau*, a lambe, *Mouton*, a weather; *Taureau*, a bull, *vache*, a cow, *veau*, a calfe, *Bœuf*, an oxe, *veau*, a bullocke, *genisse*, a heifer; *Fars*, a Gander. *Oye*, a Goose. *Oyson*, a Goslin or greene Goose. *Coq*, a Cock. *Poule*, a Hen, *Poulet*, a Cockrell or Pullet. *Chapon*, a Capon. *Hutaudeau*, a Caponnet, or a young Capon. *Poussin* signifieth not onely a Chicken, but also the yong ones of all Birds, as of an Eagle, Raven, &c.

Genders

Genders of Nounes Substantives.

TO know the genders of Substantives, such as have good skill in the Latine tongue, may observe this for a generall rule, That they have for the most part, especially those that are derived from the Latine, the same gender as they have in Latine, that is, the Masculines and Neuters in Latine are Masculines in French, and the Feminine in Latine is the same in French. This rule hath some exceptions, yet may leade the learner (desirous of expedition) verie farre in this point.

But he which desireth a more exact guide, must examine well the rules following :

1 Of the Masculine gender are the names of Men; as *Pierre*, Peter; *Jiques*, James: of Angels, as *Gabriel*: of Divels and of fabulous gods, as *Astarot*, *Jupiter*: of the Offices of men, as *Roy*, *Evesque*, a Bishop, *Orsevre*, a Goldsmith, *Chantre*, a singing man, &c. of moneths, as *Janvier*: of Dayes, as *Dimanche*, Sunday: of Trees, as *Chesne*, an Oake. *Fresne*, an Ash, &c. except *Palme*, a Palme tree. *Vigne*, a Vine. *Espine*, a Thorne. *Ronce*, a Bramble; *Bourdaine*, a low French hedge-tree so cald; *Yeuse*, holm Oke, feminines. Of Monies or coin, as *Escu*, a crowne. *Franc*, a piece of twentie Sous; except *Pistole*, a Pistolet, *Portugaise*, *Jocondale*, a Doller. *Reale*, a Ryall. *Maille*, halfe a Denier, feminines.

2 Of the Masculine Gender also are all Adjectives made Substantives, as *le long*, *le large*, *le double*, *le triple*, *le haut*, *le bas*, &c. the long, the large, &c. also the Infinitives of Verbes taking the nature of Substantives, as *le boire*, drinking, *le manger*, eating, *le dormir*, sleeping, &c. Also Adverbs, *le pis*, the worse or worst, *le mieulx*, the better or best, *le plus*, the more or most; *le moins*, the lesse or least, &c. *Le trop d'aïse mondain*, & *le peu de soïn*

de soin de servir Dieu, emmene plusieurs à perdition :
Too much wordly ease, and the little care to serve God,
brings many to destruction.

3 Contrariwise, of the Feminine Gender are all names of women, as *Alison*, *Alice*; *Jeane*, *Jane* or *Joan*, &c. of poetick goddesses, Nymphs and mules, as *Junon*, *Pallas*, *Calliope*, *Callisto*, &c. of offices attributed to women, as *Roine*, a *Queene*; *Nymphe*, a *Nymph*; *Duchesse*, a *Dutchesse*; *Lingere*, a *Seamster*, &c. of fruits, as *Crise*, a *cherrie*; *groiselle*, a *gooseberry*; *noix*, a *walnut*, &c. Except *Coing*, *abricot*, *citron*, *limon*, *marron*, *raisin*, *citrangule*, *melon*, *concombre*, *pepon*, *poivre*, *gingembre*, *genievre*, *navreau*, *raisfort*, *perreau*, *oignon*, *gland*, all Masculines.

4 Of the Feminine Gender also are all the names of virtues, as *force*, strength; *prudence*, prudence, &c. and of qualities (though some of them come of Latine Masculines in *er*) as *douleur* griefe, *chaleur* heat, *hauteur* height, *pesanteur* heaviness or weight, &c. Except *Heur*, *malheur*, *cœur*, *pleur*, *honneur*, *labeur*, Masc. and *erreur*, *humeur*, Common. Also except Verbals Actives in *eur*, as *Autheur*, *Docteur*, &c. The proper names of countries and cities considered in themselves, doe follow their terminations, as *Dannemarc*, *Poitou*, *Orleans*, *Roïen*, &c. are masculine because of their masculine termination; *Bretagne*, *France*, *Tolose*, Feminines.

5 To knowne then the Genders of Nounes by their terminations, observe, that such as end in *b, c, d*, and *e* Masculine, are

Masc. as *Plomb*, *sac*, *bec*, *nid*, *bord*, *pré*, *congé*, &c. Except all such as end in *té* and *tié*, coming from Latine words in *tas* and *tia*, as *Bonté*, *beauté*, *pitié*, *moltié*, &c. which are Feminines: yet *Esté*, *costé*, and *pasté*, are Masculines; and *Duché*, *Comté*, *Evesché*, *Archevesché*, are common.

In

- Be** In *Be* Fem. as *Robbe*, *jambe*, *sourbe*, &c. except *Globe*,
Garbe, *limbe*, *verbe*, *proverbe*, *Masc.*
- Ce** In *Ce* Fem. as *Grace*, *pièce*, *lice*, *croce*, *puce*, *apparence*,
herce, *écorce*, *source*, *sauce*, &c. except *pouce*, *prepuce*,
commerce, *divorce*, *silence*, *negoce*; all in *ice*, as *benefice*,
edifice, *caprice*, *vie*, *sacrifice*, *exercice*, *precipice*, *service*,
Masculines; and *bonace*, *negoce*, *office* and *populace*,
Common.
- De** In *De* Fem. as *Estocade*, *mode*, *ride*, *bande*, *sonde*,
corde, *bourde*, *chiquenaude*, &c. except *exorde*, *coude*,
prelude, *remède*, *monde*, *subsidi*, *Masc.* and *aide*, *cam-*
rade, *garde*, and all in *de*, as *guide*, *homicide*, *parricide*,
Common.
- ée** In *ée* Fem. as *Allée*, *chaussée*, *pipée*, &c. Except *Tro-*
phée, *Masc.*
- Fe** In *Fe*, *phe* Fem. as *Grife*, *estoffe*, *coiffe*, *piasse*, *greffe*,
 & a *grasse*, &c. except *Griffe* a kind of dog, *Gresse* the
Ph place of a Registers Office, *Triomphe*, *Epitaphe*, *Phi-*
losophe.
- Ge** In *Ge* Fem. as *vandange*, *essonge*, *targe*, *gorge*, *courge*,
sauge, *cage*, *plage*, *image*, *age*, *page* the page of a leaf,
rage, *neige*, &c. except all others (saving the above-re-
 cited) ending in *age*, *ege*, *icge* and *eige*, as *gage*, *heritage*,
herbage, *privilege*, *manège*, *piège*, *pleige*, &c. *Masc.* ex-
 cept also *Ange*, *lange*, *change*, *linge*, *singe*, *cierge*, *concier-*
ge, *songe*, *orge*, *vouge*, *juge*, *refuge*, *litige*, *vestige*, *pre-*
stige, *prodige*, *horloge*, *mensonge.* *Masc.*
- che** In *che* Fem. as *Gasche*, *mesche*, &c. except *Acrostiche*,
panache, *manche*, the haft or handle of a thing, *trenche-*
plume, *masc.* *Accroche*, *coche*, *frieche*, *common.*
- ie** In *ie* Fem. as *Scie*, *maladie*, &c.
- Le** In *Le* Fem. as *Table*, *bale*, *gabelle*, *bible*, *sangle*, *perle*,
temple, the temples of the head; *Colle*, *capriole*, *cedule*,
bouc'e, *moufle*, *voile* a Sayle, *Aigle*, *espingle*, *ongle*, *vill*,
msule, &c. except *Busle*, *branse*, *cable*, *conventicul'e*,
angle, *cercle*, *crocodile*, *comble*, *crible*, *couvercle*, *domicile*,
fronde,

froncle, habitacle, basse, masie, merle, miracle, muscle, poise a Siove, muscle, meufle, moule, module, obstacle, oracle, preambule, protocole, poise a Canopie, pinacle, rable, ruble, rode or roule, sable, seigle, siecle, scrupule, soufle, style, spectacle, tabernacle, Temple a Temple, trouble, voile, a vaile, zele, Masculines. Example, idole, obole, common.

In me Fem. as Ame, paume, cime, escume, somme, a me summe, arme, forme, ferme, &c. Except Anagramme, apophthegme, axiome, abisme, alarme, blasme, baptesme, bitume, baulme, catechisme, cataplasme, carme, charme, crime, empyreume, phantasme, or fantasme, or fantosme, flegme, or phlegme, germe, gendarme, homme, legume, psalme, or pscume, Quaresme, regime, synonyme, somme, sceppe, sophisme, Royaume, terme, tome, volume, poëme, Masc.

In ne Fem. as Cane, sepmaine, &c. Except Antimoine, Ne crane, capricorne, cerne, cigne, signe, peigne, prosne, regne, patrimoine, asne, throsne, ywrongne.

In pe Fem. as nape, pipe, &c. except Principe, jasse, P cresse.

In re Fem. as Tare, circ, peccre, froidure, cendre, esguic- Re re, balastre, chambre, ancre, fenestre, &c. Except Ambre, airc, a nest, anire, auditoire, affaire, Baptistere, beurre, bièvre, Caractere, cancre, chancre, chanvre, chapitre, catharre, cimetiére, cimetre, centre, ciboire, chevestre, cidre, cbistre, cistre, or sistre, cloistre, clystere, coffre, congre, consistoire, coriandre, cuirvre, coître, doüaire, empire, esclandre, emplastre, feuvre, or soavre, feutre, fistre, goufre, genre, gendre, gingembre, goinsre, genievre, harvre, hongre, impropere, lustre, lierre, lievre, luminaire, livre, a booke, Massacre, manbre, martyre, murmure, mystere, nombre, oratoire, opprobre, parterre, plastre, populaire, pore, pourpre, poyvre, pulpiere, offree, ordre, quare, repaire, registre, reistre, rustre, salaire, sire, sceprre, sepulchre, suaire, soufre, or souphre, sommaire, sucre, tertre, timbre, tiltre, territoire, theatre, tigre, tonnerre, ventre, vespere, verre, vinaigre, vitupere, ulcere,

ulcere. masc. *Arbitre, ancestre, navire, common.*

se In *se* Fem. as *Chemise, chose, ruse, &c.* except *vase, diocese, aise,* masc.

te In *te* Fem. as *Rate, savatte, pinette, &c.* except *Aste, architecte, compte, conte, geste, giste, haste, a spit; heste, pretexte, texte, tumulte, pilote, poste, for postillon, artiste, sophiste.*

ue In *ue* and *ve* Fem. as *Dague, casagne, pigue, bave, greve, ruë, jouë.* Except *Catalogue, masque, flasque, canrique, colloque, degue, prologue, dialogue, maigre, obelisque, conclave, eunuque, pedagogue, fleurve, glarve,* masc. and *Begue, prodigue,* com.

ye In *ye* Fem. as *Haye, playe, pluye, &c.* Except *faye.*

f, g, & h In *f, g, h,* masc. as *Chef, esquif, rang, jong, alphabet,* &c. Except *Clef, nef, soit,* feminines.

i, y, l, m In *i, y, l,* and *m,* masc. as *Souci, tournoy, bal, renom,* &c. Except *merci, loy, foy, paroy, fain,* fem.

N In *n* masc. as *Caban, marroquin, &c.* Except verballs in *son, son,* and *ion* come from Latines in *io,* as *contagion, opinion, occasion, passion, probation, complexion, and others of like forme, as Leçon, façon, rançon, tançon, marisson, moisson, guarison, raison, craison, maison, prison, traison, demangeaison, venaïson, fenaïson, foïson, pafmoïson, cloïson, boïsson; also main, nonnain, fin, putain.*

p, q, r. In *p, q, r,* masc. as *Drap, coup, coq, acier, gibier, &c.* Except *Mer, cour, chair, tour, a tower, cuillier, and substantives of quality and quantitie in eur, as douleur, douceur, saucur, noirceur, longueur, largeur, fem. Amour, common.*

s, t, u. In *s, t, u,* masc. as *Lacs, frimas, rabat, buffer, lieu, tron, &c.* Except *Souris, brebis, vis a staire or spindle of a presse, fois, dent, gent, mort, ju nent, nuit, hart, parl, forest, maist, vertu, glu, peau, eau, tribu, fem.*

X In *x* Fem. as *Poix, noix, paix, voix, croix, toux, &c.* Except *faix, courroux, prix,* masc.

z In *z* masc. as *Nez, &c.*

It appeareth that some in changing their significati-
on, do also change gender, as these:

Tour {	a turne, masc. tower, fem.	Coche , {	a coach, masc. a sow, fem.
Satyre , {	a fabulous woodgod, nasc.	Manche , {	a handle, masc. a sleeve, femi- nine.
Voile {	a Poem, fem. vaile, masc. a saile, fem.	Gresse , {	place where the R. gisters office is kept, masc. a grasse, fem.

Temple, { a Temple, or Church, masculine.
the temples of the head, fem.

Faiste, the top of any thing, masc. { of different orthogra-
Feste, a feast, or holy day, fem. { phy.

Haste, { a spie, masc.
hast, fem. | **Page**, { a page or youth, masc.
a side of a leaf, fem.

Livre, { a booke, masc.
a pound, femi-
nine. | **Poiste**, { a canopie, or a
stove, masc.
frying-pan, fem.

Periode, { for the end or declining of a thing, masc.
for the point in a sentence, fem.

Trompette, a trumpetter, masc. and a trumpet, fem.

Enseigne, an Enseigne-bearer, masc. and the Enseigne
it selfe, fem. So **Cornette**, a Cornet of horse, **Sentinelle**,
a sentinell, **Gnette**, a watch, **Guide**, a guide, &c. re-
ferred both to the person, and to the thing.

Comparison.

THe comparative degree, both of Nounes and Ad-
verbs, is formed by adding *Plus* to the positive; and
the superlative by adding *Tres* afore: as *Juste*, *plus*
juste,
D

juste, *tresjuste* : *Chaste*, *plus chaste*, *treschaste* : so the adverbs, *justement*, *plus justement*, *tresjustement*. These following alter their comparative, but not the superlative.

	Good.	well.		
Positive,	<i>Bon</i> ,	<i>Bien</i>		<i>evill.</i> <i>ill.</i>
Compa-	<i>Meilleur</i> , <i>mieux</i> ,			<i>Mauvais</i> , <i>Mal.</i>
rative,				<i>Pire</i> , <i>Pis.</i>
Superla-	<i>Tresbon</i> . <i>Tresbien</i> .			<i>Tresmauvais</i> , <i>tresmal.</i>
tive.				

Little, small, little, few. We may say also in the comparative *plus mauvais*, *plus Petit*, *Peu*. *parait*, *plus mal*, or *pirement*; Com. *Moindre*, *moins*, but not *plus bon*, nor *plus Sup. Trespetit*, *trespeu*. *bien*, nor *plus peu*; for *Meilleur*, *mieux*, and *Moins* are unvariable.

Bien, *trop*, *beaucoup*, *par trop*, serve before comparatives, to increase their force, as *longè*, and *multo* with the Latins; *Tu es trop plus heureux que sage*, thou art much more happy than wise. *Cesar fut bien plus hardy que Pompée*, Cesar was farre more valiant than Pompey.

Homme de bien, *Femme de bien*, receive both the comparative and superlative forme, as *Plus homme de bien*, a more honest man, *treshomme de bien*, a most honest man, *tresfemme de bien*, a most honest woman.

Tous and *toutes*, all, receive the adjunction of *Tres*, as if they were superlatives; as *Trestous*, *trestoutes*, all, and every one.

Grandissime is often used for *tresgrand*; and sometime we say, *Doctissime*; also wee say to Princes, *Serenissime*, *illustissime*, and to Prelates *Reverendissime*.

Of Diminutives.

Many nouns both substantives and adjectives, receive a diminutive forme

Such as end in *n*, *t*, *r*, *e*, *d*, doe make their diminutives in

in *et*, or *eau*; as *Jardin*, a garden, *jardinet*, a little garden, *Garçon*, a boy, *garçonnet*, *garsonneau*, a little boy, *fin*, *finet*, *flatteur*, *flatereau*, *Procureur*, *procuraceau*, *Advocat*, *advocaceau*, *arbre*, *arbrisseau*, *verme*, *vermisseau*, *Larron*, *larronneau*, *rouge*, *rouget*, and (with sub-diminution) *Brun*, *bruneau*, *brunelet*, *mignard*, *mignardet*, *mignardelet*, *sergent*, *sergenteau*, *sergentelet*, *enfant*, *enfantçon*, *enfantelet*, *homme*, *hommeau*, *hommet*, *hommelet*.

In *ier* changeth into *ot*, as *Mercier*, *mercerot*, *archier*, *archerot*, &c. Also *Chien* *cagnot*.

Eau changeth into *let*, *Couteau*, *coutelet*, *manteau*, *mantelet*, *chasteau*, *chastelet*.

C into *chet*, as *Sac* *sachet*, *blanc*, *blanchet*, *blanchelet*.

S or *x* into *set*, *selet*, as *Gras*, *grasset*, *grasselet*.

Some into *on*, as *Clerc* *clergeon*, *haim*, *hameçon*, *Escu*, *Escusson*, *asne*, *asnon*, *chat*, *chaton*.

Nounes feminines are formed into *ette*, as *Femme* *femmette* *femmelette*, *maison* *maisonnette*, &c. and some few into *elle*, as *Ruë*, *ruëlle*, *rouë*, *rouëlle*, *tonne*, *tonnelle*; *prune*, *prunelle*. Proper names receive a diminutive forme, so becoming rusticall, or as nick-names, as *Faques* *James*, *Jacquet* and fem. *Jacquette*, *Jean* *John* *Fanot*, *Fanin* (applied to a cuckold) & fem. *Faneton*, *Pierre* *Peter*, *Perrot*, and fem. *Pérrette*, *Perrichon*; *Philippe*, *Philippot*; *Marguerite*, *margot*; *Charles*, *charlot*, *charlette*, &c.

We often also expresse the diminutive forme by the words *Petit*, *petite*, little, as *Petit homme*, *petite femme*; and with both, as *Petit livret*, a little small booke, *petit cavallot*, *petit larronneau*, *petit yvrongnet*, *petit pendardeau*.

The plurall number of Nounes.

The plurall number of Nounes is formed, by adding *s*, *x*, or *z*, to the singular; thus:

Such as end in *ay*, *ou*, *oy*, *uy*, e fem. *f*, *g*, *i*, *m*, *n*, *p*, *q*, *r*,
D 2 t, u,

t, u, take *s*, to make them pluralls, as *Roy*, *rois*. *Roy* *Rois*, *Clou* *clous*, *Estuy* *estuis*, &c. changing *y* into *i*.

All in *é* masculine adde to *z*, as *Bonté* *bontez*, *Aimé* *aimez*.

Nounes in *al*, *ail*, *eil*, *eul*, *œil* change the *l* into *ux*, or *x*, as *Mal* *maux*, *Ail* *aux*, *Bail* *baux*, *travail* *travaux*, *canal* *canaux*, *cheval* *chevaux*, *ciel* *cieux*, *viel* *vieux*, (which is also sometime used for singular) *Ayeul* *ayeux*, *Genoüil* *genoux*, *Verroüil* *verroux*; *Oeil* *yeux*, &c.

Nounes in *eau*, *eu*, take *x* to make them pluralls, as *Eau* *eaux*, *joyau* *joyaux*, *jeu* *jeux*, *feu* *feux*, *lieu* *lieux*.

Such as end in *s*, *x*, *z* in the singular, change not in the plurall, as *Bas*, *vis*, *gros*, *divers*, *Palais*, *courroux*, *jaloux*, *nez*, &c.

Note that all singulars in *nt*, may change their *t* into *s*, as *Prudent* *prudens*, *sçavant* *sçavans*.

Lastly, some nounes are onely singulars, as *Lait*, *miel*, *chair*, *liberalité*, *fiel*, *sel*, *moustarde*, *cholere*, *ancré*, *foy*, *salut*; and some onely pluralls, as *Cizeaux*, *tenailles*, *pincettes*, *mouchettes*, *noces*, *ancestres*, *funérailles*, *obseques*.

The declension of Nounes.

Nounes are declined onely by application of the Articles, as before in the Articles is shewed; but for the better understanding of the learner, take here the examples, and first of a substantive integrall, beginning with a consonant.

Masculine.

	Singular,	Plurall,
Nomi.	<i>Roy</i> , King.	<i>Roys</i> .
and	<i>un Roy</i> , a King.	<i>des Rois</i> .
Accus.	<i>le Roy</i> , the King.	<i>les Rois</i> , the Kings.
		Genit.

Genit.	de Roy, } of a King.	de Rois, of Kings.
&	d'un Roy, }	des Rois, of the
Ablat.	du Roy, of the King.	Kings.
Dati.	à Roy } to a King.	à Rois, }
	à un Roy, }	à des Rois, }
	au Roy, to the King.	aux Rois, to the Kings.
Voc.	ô Roy, ô King	ô Rois, ô Kings.
	ô le Roy, ô the King.	ô les Rois, ô the Kings.

Feminine.

	Singular,	Plurall,
Nomi.	Femme, woman.	Femmes, }
&	une femme, a woman.	des femmes }
Accus.	la femme, the woman	les fêmes, the women.
Genit.	de femme, womans.	de fêmes, of wom.
&	d'une femme, of a woman.	des femmes, of the
Ablat.	de la fême, of the woman.	women.
Dati.	à femme, to woman,	à femmes, }
	à une femme, to a woman	à des fem- }
	à la femme, to the woman.	mes, to women.
Voc.	ô femme, ô woman.	ô femmes, ô women.
	ô la femme, ô the woman.	ô les femmes, ô the women.

An example of a masculine nounce, beginning with a vowel.

Nominat.	Arbre, tree.	Gen.	d'arbre, of tree.
&	un arbre, a tree.	&	d'un arbre, of a tree.
Accusat.	l'arbre, the tree.	Abl.	de l'arbre, of the tree.
Dat.	à arbre, }		
	à un arbre, }		
	à l'arbre, to the tree.		

Secondly, for substances and things considered by parts and portions, and bearing the name of the whole, follow these examples :

	{	Or,	gold, or	blé	} Corne, or
Nomi.		de l'or,	some gold,	du blé.	
&	{	l'or,	the gold.	le blé,	the corne.
Accus.		paille,	} straw, or some straw.		
	de la paille,				
	{	la paille,	the straw.		
Gen. & Abl.	{	d'or,	of, or from	gold.	
		de l'or	of the, or from the	gold.	
		de blé,	of, or from	corne.	
		du blé,	of the, or from the	corne.	
		de paille,	of, or from	straw.	
	{	de la paille,	of the, from the	straw.	
Dati.	{	à or,	to, or at	gold.	
		à de l'or,	to some	gold.	
		à l'or,	to the	gold.	
		à blé,	to	corne.	
		à du blé,	to some	corne.	
		au blé	to the	corne.	
		à paille,	to	straw.	
	{	à de la paille,	to some	straw.	
	{	à la paille,	to the	straw.	

The plurals follow, in all points, the examples above propounded : for in all nouns, the articles plurall are alike. Adjectives set afore substantives, are (as before in the articles is taught) articulated with *à* and *de* onely, as *c'est de bon blé*, it is good corne, *j'ay parlé à de vertueux princes*, I have spoken to vertuous Princes.

Tout the substantive is thus declined in the singular number onely : *Tout*, all, or whole, *un tout*, a totall or whole, *le tout*, the whole, *de tout*, *d'un tout*, of a whole, *du tout*, of the whole, *à tout*, *à un tout*, to a whole, *au tout*, to the whole. The adjective, thus: *Tout*, all, *de tout*, of all, *à tout*, to all ; *Tous*, all, *de tous*, of all, *à tous*, to all:

so femin. *Toute*, de *toute*, à *toute* ; *Toutes*, de *toutes*, à *toutes*. Also *un* is thus declined : *un*, one, *l'un*, the one, *d'un*, of one, *de l'un*, of the one, à *un*, to one, à *l'un*, to the one ; Plur. *uns*, some, *les uns*, some ; *d'uns*, des *uns*, of some ; à *uns*, aux *uns*, to some : so the feminine *une*.

Deux, *trois*, *quatre*, &c. taken substantively, for the character of the number, admit an article before them; as *un deux*, a two, *le deux*, the two, meaning the figure of 2. so *un trois*, or *le trois*, is three, *un quatre*, or *le quatre*, is four, &c. But put in the plurall, they are adjectives, articulated thus : *Deux*, *les deux*, *de deux*, *des deux*, à *deux*, aux *deux* : and so of the others.

Of Nounes of Number.

THe Cardinal numbers are these, *un*, mascul. *une*, fem. *deux*, 2. *trois*, 3. *quatre*, 4. *cinq*, 5. *six*, 6. *sept*, 7. *huit*, 8. *neuf*, 9. *dix*, 10. *onze*, 11. *douze*, 12. *treize*, 13. *quatorze*, 14. *quinze*, 15. *seize*, 16. *dixsept*, seventene, *dixhuit*, eightene, *dixneuf*, nineteene, *vingt*, twenty, *vingt & un*, twenty one, &c. *rente*, thirty ; *quarante*, 40. *cinquante*, fifty ; *soixante*, sixty, or threescore ; *septante*, seventy, or *soixante & dix*, threescore and ten, *huitente* or *ostante*, eighty, or *quatre-vingts*, fourescore ; *nonante*, ninety ; or *quatre-vingts & dix*, fourescore and tenne ; *Cent*, an hundred ; *deux cents*, two hundred ; &c. *Mille*, a thousand, *deux mille*, two thousand, &c. *un million*, a million, *dix millions*, ten million, *un milliard*, or *milliade*, a thousand millions. Where you see that *vingt*, *cent*, *million*, and *milliard*, admit the plurall forme, as *six vingts*, six score, *trois cents*, three hundred, *sept millions*, seven millions, &c. *Cent* is sometimes a substantive, as *un cent d'œufs*, an hundred of egges ; *Mille* is ever an adjective, as *mille hommes*, a thousand men ; but *millier* is a substantive, as *un millier d'hommes*, a thousand of men :

Million and *milliard*, *milliade*, are alwayes substantives.

Ordinall numbers are *Premier premiere*, first; *Second seconde*, or *deuxième*, second; *Tiers*, tierce, or *troisième*, third; *Quart*, *quarte*, or *quatrième*, fourth; *Quint quinte*, or *cinquième*, fifth; *Sixième*, sixth; *Septième*, &c. infinitely, made of the Cardinall by putting to *ième* or *iesme*; all which, that so end, are of the common gender.

Proportionall, as *Simple*, *double*, *triple*, *quadruple*, or *quatrième*, made of the Latine, by omitting the *x*. Collectives, as *Quatrain*, *sixain*, *dixain*, &c. Adverbiall, *s une fois*, once, *deux fois*, twice, *trois fois*, thrice; *quatre fois*, four times, &c.

C H A P. I V.

Of a Pronoun.

PRonounes personals are *Je moy*, *tu toy*, *il luy*, *elle*, *Soy*, & *may-mesme*, *toy-mesme*, *soy-mesme*.

Demonstratives, *Luy*, *elle*, *ce*, *ceste*, *celuy*, *celle*, *cestuy* or *cetuy*, *cetuy-cy*, *cette-cy*, *cetuy-là*, *cette-là*, *celuy-cy*, *celuy-là*, *celle-là*, *cecy*, *cela*.

Possessives, *Mon ma*, *ton ta*, *son sa*, *mien mienne*, *tien tienne*, *sien sienne*, *nostre*, *vostre*, *leur*. Relatives and interrogatives, *Luy*, *elle*, *iceluy*, *icelle*, *qui*, *que*, *quoy*, *quel*, *quelle*, *laquelle*, and the participles relatives, *y*, *en*, *dont*. Indefinites, *quelque*, *quelcun* *quelcune*, *aucun* *aucune*, *chaque* *chacun*, *chacune*, *quiconque*, *quelconque*, *autre*, *autrui*, *nul* *nette*, and *pas-un*, *pas-une*, *personne*.

Pronounes have two sorts of cases; the conjunctive, and the absolute: the conjunctive are joyned with verbs or nounes substantives, as *Il est*, he is; *cette femme*, this woman; the absolute are used alone absolutely, or in answer

answer of a question, as *Qui a fait cela ?* who hath done that ? *luy*, he. *Voilà une belle maison*, there is a faire house : *C'est la nôtre*, it is ours. Where you may note, that the conjunctive nominatives admit no article, but the absolute of possessives doc.

Personall pronounes are of the common gender, and are thus declined.

The first person, *Je* and *moy*, I.

Conjunct.		absolut.	Conj. abs.	
Singular.	Nomi.	<i>Je</i> :	<i>Moy</i>	<i>Nous</i> , <i>nous</i>
	Gen. Abl.	de <i>moy</i> ,		de <i>nous</i> .
	Dat.	<i>Me</i> , <i>moy</i> , à <i>moy</i> ,	Pl.	<i>Nous</i> : à <i>nous</i> .
	Accus.	<i>Me</i> , <i>moy</i> .		<i>Nous</i> , <i>nous</i> .
	Vocat.	ô <i>moy</i> .		ô <i>nous</i> .

The second person, *Tu* and *toy*, thou.

Conjunct.		Absol.	Conjun. Absol.	
Singular.	Nom.	<i>Tu</i> : <i>Toy</i> ,		<i>Vous</i> , <i>vous</i>
	Gen. Abl.	de <i>Toy</i> ,		de <i>vous</i> .
	Dat.	<i>te</i> , <i>toy</i> , à <i>toy</i> ,	Pl.	<i>Vous</i> : à <i>vous</i> ,
	Accus.	<i>Te</i> , <i>Toy</i> ,		<i>Vous</i> ; <i>vous</i> ,
	Vocat.	ô <i>Toy</i> .		ô <i>vous</i> .

Conjunct.		Absolut.	Conjunct. Absol.	
Singular.	Nomi.	<i>Il</i> : <i>luy</i> ,		<i>Ils</i> : <i>eux</i> ,
	Gen. Abl.	de <i>luy</i>		d' <i>eux</i> ,
	Dat.	<i>luy</i> ; à <i>luy</i> .	Pl.	<i>leur</i> , à <i>eux</i> ,
	Accus.	<i>le</i> : <i>luy</i> .		<i>les</i> : <i>eux</i> .
	Voc.	ô <i>luy</i> .		ô <i>eux</i> .

The third person *il*, *luy*, he, Masculine ;
and *elle*, *lhee*, Feminine.

Conjunct.		Absol.	Conjun. Abso.	
Singular.	Nomi.	<i>Elle</i> : <i>elle</i> .		<i>Elles</i> , <i>elles</i> ,
	Gen. Abl.	d' <i>elle</i> .		d' <i>elles</i> .
	Dat.	<i>luy</i> , à <i>elle</i> .	Pl.	<i>leur</i> ; à <i>elles</i> .
	Accus.	<i>la</i> : <i>elle</i> ,		<i>les</i> ; <i>elles</i> ,
	Voc.	ô <i>elle</i> .		ô <i>elles</i> .

These

Feminine.

Conjunc.

Conjunc. Absol.

S { N. Ac. *Ceste, cette.*
G. Ab. *deceste, de cette.*
Dat. *à ceste, or à cette.* } P { *Ces, cestes, or cettes.*
decès, de cestes, decettes.
à ces, à cestes, à cettes.

All the demonstrative Pronounes are declined like this example, by application of the indefinite Articles *à* and *de* onely.

Note, that *ce* is set afore words beginning with a consonant, as *ce livre*, this booke, and *cet* or *cest* afore words beginning with a vowell, or *h* mute, as *cet arbre*, this tree; *cet homme*, this man.

Also *ce*, when it is put alone without a substantive, or hath *qui* or *que* after it, is neutrall, signifying That, or It: *Ce feroit une belle trousse*, That would be a faire cozening trick. *C'est bien dit*, it is well said. *Ce que je di est vray*, that which I say is true. *Ce qui vous est mal-seant*, which thing is unseemely for you. *Ce ne croy-je pas*, that I beleieve not. *Estant de ce fort joyeux*, being very joyfull of that. To these demonstratives, for more expresse demonstration, are added the adverbiall particles *cy* here, and *là* there, the substantive demonstrated set between thus: *Ce livre-cy*, this booke. *Cette plume-li*, that pen. *Cet honnest homme-cy*, this honest man here. *Cette belle fille-là*, that faire maiden there. All other demonstrative Pronounes are declined like the former example, by the indefinite Articles *de* and *à*. *Cetuy, celui, celle, cette, ceux*, take also *cy* and *la* to them, as *Cetuy-cy*, this same; *celuy-là*, that same: *cette-cy*, *cette-li*; *celuy-cy*, *celuy-là*; *celle-cy*, *celle-là*; *cettes-cy*, *cettes-là*; *ceux-cy*, *ceux-li*; *celles-cy*, *celles-li*; these same, those same, or them same.

Relatives and interrogatives.

Qui, quoy, quel, quelle, iceluy, icelle, are declined with the indefinite Articles *de* and *à*; as *Quel, de quel, à quel, quels, de quels, à quels*, what or which. So *quoy, de quoy, à quoy*,

quoy, neuter, what or which thing.

Common gen.

Sing. { Nom. *Qui*. } Note, that *que* is the Accus.
 { G. Abl. *de qui*. } case of *qui* which, the relative,
 { Dative *à qui*. } but *qui* is the Accus. of *qui*
 { Accus. *que, qui* } who, the Interrog.

Lequel, the which, or who; masculine.

Singul. { N. Ac *Lequel*. } *l'esquels*.
 { G. Ab. *duquel* } Plur. { *desquels*.
 { Dat. *auquel*. } *ausquels* or *esquels*.

So *laquelle*, *de laquelle*, *à laquelle*: *lesquelles*, *desquelles*, *ausquelles*, or *esquelles*.

Mon, my, mine. Possessives.

Conjunct.

Masc. Fem.

Com.

Singul. { Nom. Accus. *Mon, ma*. } *Mes*.
 { Gen. Abl. *de mon, de ma*. } Plur. { *de mes*.
 { Dative, *à mon, à ma*. } *à me*.

Absolute.

Conjunct. Absol.

Conjunct.

Mien, *le mien*; *un mien*. } *Miens*, *les miens*; *des miens*.
de mien, *du mien*; *d'un mien*. } *de miens*, *des miens*.
au mien; *à un mien*. } *à miens*, *aux miens*.
 or *es miens*, *à des miens*.

Nom. { *Miéne*, *la miéne*, Absol.

Accu. { *un miéne*, Conjunct.

Gen. { *de miéne*, *de la miéne*, Absol.

Ablat. { *d'une miéne*, Conjunct.

Dat. { *à miéne*, *à la miéne*; *à une miéne*.

Plur. *Ménes*, *les miénes*, *des miénes*; *de miénes*, *des miénes*; *à miénes*, *aux miénes*, and *es miénes*; *à des miénes*, *mina*. So *Ton*, *ta*, *tien*, thy, thine; and *son*, *sa*, *sien*, his or her, hers.

Note, that *Mon*, *ton*, *son*, being Masculines, are yet set afore Nounes Feminines, beginning with a vowell or *h* mute; as *Mon ame*, my soule. *Son honnester ecompense*, his honest reward: and being joyned with these two words, *amie*, *amour*, do sometime suffer syncope; *m'amie*, *m'amour*,

m'amour, as before in the Apostrophus note is observed.

Nostre, our. Conjunctive, absolute.

Nomin.	Masc. <i>Nostre, un nostre, nostre, le nostre.</i>
Accusat.	Fem. <i>Nostre, une nostre, nostre, la nostre.</i>
Genit.	Masc. <i>de nostre, d'un nostre, du nostre.</i>
Ablat.	Fem. <i>de nostre, d'une nostre, de la nostre.</i>
Dativ.	Masc. <i>à nostre, à un nostre, au nostre.</i>
	Fem. <i>à nostre, à une nostre, à la nostre.</i>

Conjunctive, absolute.

	Nos, des nostres, les nostres.
Plural.	
Com-	de nos, des nostres.
mon	
gender.	à nos; à des nostres, aux nostres.

Thus also *vostre*, your, yours; and *leur* their, theirs;
Common.

Conjunctive, absolute.

Masc. *Leur, un leur, le leur.*

Fem. *Leur, une leur, la leur.*

Conjunctive, absolute.

Plur.	leurs, des leurs, les leurs,
	&c.

Indefinites.

Quelque, quelques, some, of the Common Gender
quelcun or *quelqu'un*, *quelcune*, *quelques-uns*, *quelques-unes*. some, some one: *Aucun, aucune, aucuns, aucunes*, any, any one, some: *Chaque* common, and *chacun, chacune, chacun, chacune*, each, every: *Quiconque* who-soever, *quelconque* whatsoever; *Nul, nulle, nuls, nulles*, none; *Autre* other, another; *Autrui*, anothers; *Celui*, he; *Ceux*, they; are all declinable by means of the indefinite articles *de* and *à* only.

Même.

<i>Mefme</i> , same.		Conjunct.	absolute.
Sing.	{ Nom. Aceuf.	<i>Mefme</i> ,	<i>le mefme</i> .
	{ Genit. Ablat.	<i>de mefme</i> ;	<i>du mefme</i> .
	{ Dative,	<i>à mefme</i> ,	<i>au mefme</i> .
Plur.	{ <i>Mefmes</i> , <i>les mefmes</i> .	} Thus the Femi-	
	{ <i>de mefmes</i> , <i>des mefmes</i> .		nine <i>Mefme</i> , <i>la</i>
	{ <i>à mefmes</i> , <i>aux mefmes</i> .		<i>meisme</i> .

Mefme is compounded with Pronouns, as the syllable *met* in Latine; but not with *je*, *tu*, *il*, *ils*, *me*, *te*, *se*, but many others; as *moy-mefme* my selfe, *luy-mefme*, himfelfe, &c.

C H A P. V.

Of a Verbe.

Verbes are of three sorts; Actives, Passives and Neuters. The actives from their Preterperfect Tense by *J'ay*; as *J'ay aimé*: the Passive by *Je suis*; as *Je suis aimé*: the Neuters are of two sorts, Absolute and Reciprocall. Absolute, which form the Preterperfect Tense by *Je suis*; as *Je suis allé*: Reciprocall, which put *me*, *te*, *se*, *nous*, *vous* afore them; as *Je me fâche*, I am angry: *il se mocque*, hee mocketh. Of all which hereafter.

There are two auxiliar verbes (as you see) by whose helpe all verbes are conjugated, namely, *J'ay* and *Je suis*: wherefore first of all, their conjugation must diligently be learned by heart, thus:

Indicative Mood, Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>J'ay</i> , I have.		Pl.	<i>Nous avons</i> , we have.	
	<i>Tu as</i> , thou hast.			<i>Vous avez</i> , yee have;	
	<i>Il a</i> , he hath.			<i>Ils ont</i> , they have.	
Sing.	<i>Je suis</i> , I am.		Pl.	<i>Nous sommes</i> , we are.	
	<i>Tu es</i> , thou art.			<i>Vous estes</i> , ye are.	
	<i>Il est</i> , he is.			<i>Ils sont</i> , they are.	

The

The Preterimperfect Tense.

S.	{	<i>J'avois</i> , I had.	}	P.	{	<i>Nous avions</i> , we had.
		<i>Tu avois</i> , thou hadst.				<i>Vous aviez</i> , ye had.
S.	{	<i>Il avoit</i> , he had.	}	P.	{	<i>Ils avoyent</i> , they had.
		<i>J'estois</i> , I was.				<i>Nous estions</i> , we were.
S.	{	<i>Tu estois</i> , thou wast.	}	P.	{	<i>Vous estiez</i> , ye were.
		<i>Il estoit</i> , he was.				<i>Ils estoient</i> , they were.

The first Preterperfect, of time definite.

S.	{	<i>J'en</i> , I had.	}	P.	{	<i>Nous eûmes</i> , we had.
		<i>Tu eus</i> , thou hadst.				<i>Vous eûtes</i> , ye had.
S.	{	<i>Il eut</i> , he had.	}	P.	{	<i>Ils eurent</i> , they had.
		<i>Je fus</i> , I was.				<i>Nous fûmes</i> , we were.
S.	{	<i>Tu fus</i> , thou wast.	}	P.	{	<i>Vous fûtes</i> , ye were.
		<i>Il fut</i> , he was.				<i>Ils furent</i> , they were.

The second Preterperfect Tense, compound and indefinite.

Singul.	{	<i>J'ay eu</i> , I have had.
		<i>Tu as eu</i> , thou hast had.
		<i>Il a eu</i> , he hath had.
Plural.	{	<i>Nous avons eu</i> , we have had.
		<i>Vous avez eu</i> , ye have had.
		<i>Ils ont eu</i> , they have had.
Singul.	{	<i>J'ay esté</i> , I have been.
		<i>Tu as esté</i> , thou hast been.
		<i>Il a esté</i> , he hath been.
Plural.	{	<i>Nous avons esté</i> , we have been.
		<i>Vous avez esté</i> , ye have been.
		<i>Ils ont esté</i> , they have been.

The Preterpluperfect Tense.

Singul.	{	<i>J'avois eu</i> , I had had.
		<i>Tu avois eu</i> , thou hadst had.
		<i>Il avoit eu</i> , he had had.
Plural.	{	<i>Nous avions eu</i> , we had had.
		<i>Vous aviez eu</i> , ye had had.
		<i>Ils avoyent eu</i> , they had had.

J'avois.

Singular.	{	<i>J'avois esté</i> , I had been.
		<i>Tu avois esté</i> , thou hadst been.
		<i>Il avoit esté</i> , he had been.
Plural.	{	<i>Nous avions esté</i> , we had been.
		<i>Vous aviez esté</i> , ye had been.
		<i>Ils avoient esté</i> , they had been.

Future Tense.

Singular.	{	<i>J'auray</i> , I shall have.
		<i>Tu auras</i> , thou shalt have.
		<i>Il aura</i> , he shall have.
Plural.	{	<i>Nous aurons</i> , we shall have.
		<i>Vous aurez</i> , ye shall have.
		<i>Ils auront</i> , they shall have.
Singular.	{	<i>Je seray</i> , I shall be.
		<i>Tu seras</i> , thou shalt be.
		<i>Il sera</i> , he shall be.
Plural.	{	<i>Nous serons</i> , we shall be.
		<i>Vous serez</i> , ye shall be.
		<i>Ils seront</i> , they shall be.

Some have two other Tenses of *Je suis* : viz.

1. Præterperfect redoubled, or Pluperfect definite.

J'eu esté, I had been, *tu eus esté*, *il eut esté*, *Nous eûmes esté*, *vous eûstes esté*, *ils eurent esté*.

2. Præterperfect indefinite redoubled, or Pluperfect indefinite.

J'ay eu esté, *tu as eu esté*, *il a eu esté*, *nous avons eu esté*, *vous avez eu esté*, *ils ont eu esté*.

The Imperative Mood.

S {	{	<i>Aye</i> , have thou.	P {	{	<i>Ayons</i> , let us have.
		<i>Qu'il aye</i> , or <i>aye</i> .			<i>Ayez</i> , have ye.
		let him have.			<i>qu'ils aient</i> , let them have.
S {	{	<i>Sois</i> , be thou.	P {	{	<i>Soyons</i> , let us be.
		<i>Qu'il soit</i> , let			<i>Soyez</i> , be ye.
		him be.			<i>qu'ils soient</i> , let them be.

Optative.

Optative Mood, Present and Future Tense. *A la mienne volonté que*, or *Dieu veuille que*, God grant: but to the future is added *cy-apres*, hereafter.

S.	{ J'aye, I have, or may have. Tu ayes, thou have. Il ait, aye, he have.	P.	{ Nous ayons. Vous ayez. Ils ayent.
S.	{ Je soy, I be, or may be. Tu sois, thou be. Il soit, he be.	P.	{ Nous soyons. Vous soyez. Ils soyent.

1. Preterimperfect. *Pleust à Dieu que*,
would God.

S.	{ J'eusse, I had, or might have. Tu eusses, thou hadst. Il eust, he had.	P.	{ Nous eussions. Vous eussiez. Ils eussent.
S.	{ Je fusse, I were, or might be. Tu fusses, thou wert. Il fust, or fusse, he were.	P.	{ Nous fussions. Vous fussiez. Ils fussent.

Second imperfect Tense. *Volontiers*,
willingly.

S.	{ J'auroy, I would have. Tu aurois, thou wouldst have. Il auroit, he would have.	P.	{ Nous aurions. Vous auriez. Ils auroient.
S.	{ Je seroy, I should be. Tu serois, thou should be. Il seroit, he should be.	P.	{ Nous serions. Vous seriez. Ils seroient.

Preterperfect Tense, *à la mienne volonté que*,
or *Dieu veuille que*, I pray God.

S.	{ J'aye eu, I have had. Tu ayes eu, thou hast had. Il ait, aye eu, he hath had.	P.	{ Nous ayons eu. Vous ayez eu. Ils ayent eu.
S.	{ J'aye esté, I have been. Tu ayes esté, thou hast been. Il ait, aye esté, he hath been.	P.	{ Nous ayons esté. Vous ayez esté. Ils ayent esté.

The first Pluperfect Tense. *Pleust à Dieu*
que, would God.

S.	{	<i>J'eusse eu</i> , I had had.	P.	{	<i>Nous eussions.</i>
		<i>Tu eusses eu</i> , thou hadst had.			<i>Vous eussiez.</i>
		<i>Il eust, eusse eu</i> , he had had.			<i>Ils eussent.</i>
	{	<i>J'eusse esté</i> , I had been.	P.	{	<i>Nous eussions esté.</i>
		<i>Tu eusses esté</i> , thou hadst been.			<i>Vous eussiez esté.</i>
		<i>Il eust esté</i> , he had been.			<i>Ils eussent esté.</i>

The second Pluperfect Tense. *Volontiers*,

Singul. willingly.

	{	<i>J'aurais eu</i> , I would have had.	P.	{	<i>Nous aurions eu.</i>
		<i>Tu aurais eu</i> , thou wouldst, &c.			<i>Vous auriez eu.</i>
		<i>Il aurait eu</i> , he would have had.			<i>Ils auraient eu.</i>
	{	<i>J'aurais esté</i> , I would have been		{	<i>Nous aurions esté.</i>
		<i>Tu aurais esté</i> , thou wouldst, &c.			<i>Vous auriez esté.</i>
		<i>Il aurait esté</i> , he would, &c.			<i>Ils auraient esté.</i>

The Subjunctive Mood is wholly like to the Optative,
saying in the future Tense, which it
hath peculiar.

Subjunctive, Future Tense. *Quand*, when.

Singul.

Plural.

	{	<i>J'auray eu</i> , I shall have had.		{	<i>Nous aurons eu.</i>
		<i>Tu auras eu</i> , thou shalt have had.			<i>Vous aurez eu.</i>
		<i>Il aura eu</i> , he shall have had.			<i>Ils auront eu.</i>

Singul.

Plural.

	{	<i>J'auray esté</i> , I shall have been.		{	<i>Nous aurons esté.</i>
		<i>Tu auras esté</i> , thou shalt have bin.			<i>Vous aurez esté.</i>
		<i>Il aura esté</i> , he shall have been.			<i>Ils auront esté.</i>

The Subjunctive formes are these, *Tant que*, *jusques à tant que*, *jusques à ce que*, applicable to all Tenses: *Bien que*, *combien que*, *ore que*, *encore que*, *ja-soit que*, *soit que*, *pourveu que*, *mais que*, *comme ainsi soit que*, *ainsi que*, *ainsi soit que*, *avant que*, *premier que*, to the present and first imperfect, perfect, and first pluperfect, and (not amisse) to the second pluperfect; *Comme ainsi fust que*, to the first imperfect, and pluperfect; *Lors que*, *si*, *si tost que*, *si est-ce*

estre que, goe well with the second imperfect, second pluperfect, and future &c.

Infinitive Mood, present, and preterimperfect tense, *Avoir*, to have. *Estre*, to be.

Preterperfect, and pluperfect Tense, *Avoir eu*, to have had. *Avoir esté*, to have been.

Participles. { Present, and imperfect, active, *Ayant*, having : *Estant*, being.
Preterperfect and pluperfect, active, *Ayant eu*, having had, *Ayant esté*, having bin.
Preterite, passive, or common, *Eue, uë*, had. *Esté*, bin.

Participle of the future Tense in Latine, *Habiturus, futurus*. *J'espere que j'auray, que tu auras, &c.* *Que je doy avoir, que je suis pour avoir; que je vuy avoir*, that I shall have, ought, am, goe, or am about to have; and *que je vey avoir*, that I will have. So *que je devroy avoir, &c.*

Supines, *Habituire, Aller avoir*, to goe to have, *Habitu, D'estre eu, Avoir*, to be had.

Gerunds, *Habendi, D'avoir*, of having; *Habendo, En ayant*, in having; *Habendum, Pour avoir*, for to have, *Habendum est, Il faut avoir*, one must have, &c. After these formes also, *Estre*; as, *Qui sera, qui doit estre, qui est pour estre, qui est à estre, qui est pres d'estre, qui va estre, &c.* So all other verbes.

Here are 2. things observable : 1. Such verbs as end in *oy*, (except the names of verbs) having his diphthong, *Je voy, je doy, je croy, &c.* have three varieties, *oy, oye, and ois*, as *J'avoys, j'avoys, j'avois; J'auroys, j'auroys, j'aurois*. All second persons plurall doe end in *ez* long as *vous avez, vous aurez*; Except definites, or first preterperfect Tenses, and these three, *vous estes, vous dites, vous faites*, whose last syllable is short.

Verbes actives transitives, are so called, because the effect of the verbe passeth from one subject being agent,

agent, into another, which is patient; so conteyning two persons, one of the nominative case afore, the other of the accusative or dative; as *J'ayme les lettres*, I love learning; *La vertu me plaist*, vertue pleaseth me.

Again, verbs are either regular, of which one generall & infallible rule may be given; or irregular, which cannot be brought under one rule, but have each something particular. But custome hath prevailed, in imitation of the Latine, to distribute them into foure conjugations; about the order of which, the opinions of Authors are divers, some making the second that which others make the third, &c. But all agreeing on the first, it mattereth not greatly for the other.

The first conjugation then hath it infinitive in *er*, as *Aimer*; the second in *ir*, as *Bastir*; the third in *oir*, as *Voir*; and the fourth in *re*, as *Prendre*.

The conjugating of all verbs doth commonly depend on these five parts, from which all the other tenses are deduced and formed: 1. The theame or first person singular of the present tense Indicative: 2. The first preterperfect tense, definite: 3. The infinitive: 4. The Participle active present: 5. The participle preterite passive, which I call also common.

For the deduction of the other parts from these, observe well these rules: 1. The theame or first person Indicative is formed of the Infinitive, in the first, second and third conjugations by putting away *r*, as *Aimer*, *J'ayme*; *fournir*, *Jeourny*; *voir*, *Je voy*; and in the fourth conjugation by putting away *re*, or the last syllable, as *Prendre*, *je prend*; *cognoistre*, *Je cognoy*.

2. The first person plurall of the theame, is formed of the participle active present, by changing *ant* into *ons*, as *Aymant*, *aymons*; *fournissant*, *fournissons*; *voyant*, *voyons*: Or contrariwise, the said participle, of the said first person plurall, by changing *ons* into *ant*, yet remembering

membring this, that if there bee a diphthong in the rheame, it must be in the third person plurall; though it be not in the participle, nor first and second persons plurall; as *Je reçois, nous recevons, ils reçoivent*.

3. The Imperfect Tense Indicative is formed of the said first person plurall, or of the said participle present, by changing *ons* or *ant* into *oi, oye, or ois*; as *Aymons* or *aymant, J'aymoy. Prenons* or *prenant, Je prenoy, &c.*

4. The future Tense, by adding *ay* to the Infinitive, after the last *r*, as *Aymier, J'aymeray, Prendre, Je prendray*.

5. The second person singular of the Imperative, is ever the Theame it selfe, rejecting the personall pronoun *Je*; the third is formed of the third person plurall of the Theame, putting away *nt*, and the plurall number is the same with the Indicative present, rejecting *Nous* and *vous*; as *Ayme, qu'il ayme, Aymons, ayez, qu'ils aient. Reçois, qu'il reçoive, Recevons, recevez, qu'ils reçoivent*. Except from this rule, the verbs *Faire* and *Sçavoir*.

6. The present and future Tenses optative, and subjunctive, are the same as the third person singular of the Imperative, as *Que j'ayme, benisse, reçoive, prène*: & in the first and second persons plurall, it taketh i afore the last syllable, as *Aymions, aymiez, Benissions, benifiez, Prenions, preniez, &c.*

7. The first imperfect of the Optative and Subjunctive is formed of the second person singular of the first preterperfect indicative; (called definite) by putting to *se*, as *Aymas, aymasse, benis, benisse*.

8. The second imperfect of the Optative and Subjunctive is formed of the future Indicative, by changing *e* into *o*, or *ay* into *roy*, as *Aymeray, aymeroy, Beniray, beniroy*. Some irregulars excepted.

9. All the other Tenses are compounded of the auxiliary verbs, and of the participle preterite or common, as *J'ay parlé, J'avoy parlé; J'eusse parlé, &c. Je suis parlé, &c.*

Thus from these five parts, all the rest are deduced, as in these examples here following, appeareth.

Indicative Mood, present Tense, singular.

1. I love, *J'aime, tu aimes, il aime.*
2. I build, *Je basty, tu bastis, il bastit.*
3. I see, *Je voy, tu vois, il voit.*
4. I read, *Je ly, or lis, tu lis, il lit.*

Plur. { *Nous aimons, vous aimez, ils aiment.*
Nous bastissons, vous bastissez, ils bastissent.
Nous voyons, vous voyez, ils voyent.
Nous lisons, vous lisez, ils lisent.

The preterimperfect Tense.

I did love, *J'aimoy, tu aimois, il aimoit.*
 I did build, *Je bastissoy, tu bastissois, il bastissoit.*
 I did see, *Je voyoy, tu voyois, il voyoit.*
 I did read, *Je lisois, tu lisois, il lisoit.*

Plur. { *Nous aymions, vous aymiez, ils aimoyent.*
bastissions, bastissiez, bastissoient.
voyions, voyiez, voyoyent.
lisions, lisiez, lisoient.

The first preterperfect, of time definite.

Sing. { *I loved, J'aimay, tu aimas, il aimas.*
I builded, Je basty, tu bastis, il bastist.
I saw, Je vey, or vy, tu veus or vis, il veist.
I did read, Je leu, tu leus, il leut.

Plur. { *Nous aimasmes, vous aimastes, ils aimerent.*
bastismes, bastistes, bastirent.
veismes, or vismes, veistes, virent.
leusmes, leustes, leurent.

The second preterperfect tense, compound
and unlimited.

Sing. I have { loved,
builted,
scene,
read, } J'ay, tu as, il a { aimé,
basty.
veu.
leu.

Plur. Nous avons, vous avez, ils ont { aimé.
basty.
veu.
leu.

The preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing. I had. { loved,
builted,
scene,
read, } J'avois, tu avois, il avoit. { aimé,
basty.
veu.
leu.

Plur. Nous avions, vous aviez, ils avoient { aimé.
basty.
veu.
leu.

The first redoubled definite: a Tense
proper to the French.

Sing. J'eus, tu eus, il eut.

Plur. { Nous eûmes, { aimé.
vous eûtes, { basty.
ils eurent, { veu.
leu, } I had { loved.
built.
scene.
read.

The second redoubled indefinite, also proper
to the French.

Sing. J'ay eu, tu as eu, il a eu { aimé, basty.
veu, leu.

Plur. { Nous avons eu, vous { aimé.
avez eu, ils ont eu. { basty.
veu.
leu.

The Future Tense singular.

S. { I shall { love, *J'aymeray*, tu *aymeras*, il *aymera*.
 or { build, *bastiray*, *bastiras*, *bastira*.
 I will { see, *voiray*, or *verray*, *verras*, *verra*.
 read, *liray*, *liras*, *lira*.

Plur. { *Nous aymerons*, *vous aimerez*, *ils aimeront*.
bastirons, *bastirez*, *bastiront*.
verrons, *verrez*, *verront*.
lirons, *lirez*, *liront*.

Note that *verray*, *verras*, *verra*, &c. is most used, instead of *voiray*, *voiras*, &c.

Imperative mood.

Singul. { love, } thou { *Ayme.* } qu'il { *ayme.*
 build, } { *Bast.* } *bastisse.*
 see, } { *Voy.* } *voye.*
 read, } { *Lis.* } *lise.*

Plur. { *Aymons*, *aymez*, qu'ils *ayment*.
Bastissons, *bastissez*, qu'ils *bastissent*.
Voyons, *voyez*, qu'ils *voyent*.
Lisons, *lisez*, qu'ils *lisent*.

Optative Mood, present and future Tenses: *A la miéne volonté que*, or *Dieu vuille que*, God grant. But to the future is added *Cy-apres*, hereafter.

Sing that { I love, *J'ayme*, tu *aymes*, il *ayme*.
 { I build, *Je bastisse*, tu *bastisses*, il *bastisse*.
 { I see, *Je voye*, tu *voyes*, il *voye*.
 { I read, *Je lise*, tu *lises*, il *lise*.
 Plur. { *Nous aymons*, *vous aimiez*, *ils aiment*.
bastissions, *bastissiez*, *bastissent*.
voyions, *voyiez*, *voyent*.
lisions, *lisiez*, *lisent*.

57

The first Imperfect. *Pleust à Dieu que*, Would God.

	I loved, <i>J'aymaste,</i>	tu <i>aymasses,</i>	il <i>aymast.</i>
Sing.	I builded, <i>Je bastisse,</i>	<i>bastisses,</i>	<i>bastist.</i>
	I saw, <i>Je veisse,</i>	<i>veisses,</i>	<i>veist.</i>
	I read, <i>Je leusse,</i>	<i>leusses,</i>	<i>leust.</i>
Plur.	<i>Nous aymassions,</i>	<i>vous aymassiez,</i>	<i>ils aymassent.</i>
	<i>bastissions,</i>	<i>bastissiez,</i>	<i>bastissent.</i>
	<i>veissions,</i>	<i>veissiez,</i>	<i>veissent.</i>
	<i>leussions,</i>	<i>leussiez,</i>	<i>leussent.</i>

The second imperfect. *Volontiers*, willingly.

Singul. I would { love, *J'aymeroy, tu aymerois, il aymeroit.*
build, *Je bastiroy, tu bastirois, il bastiroit.*
see, *Je verroy, tu verrois, il verroit.*
read, *Je liroy, tu lirois, il liroit.*

Pl. { Nous aymerions, vous aymeriez, ils aimeroient.
bastirions, bastiriez, bastiroient.
verrions, verriez, verroient.
lirions, liriez, liroient.

The preterperfect Tense, *à la mienne volonté que,*
or *je prie Dieu que,* I pray God.

Sing. { loved,
I have { builded, } Faye , tu ayes, il aye, { ay mē,
 { seene, } or il ayr. { basty.
 { read, }

Plur. *Nous ayons, vous ayez, ils aient.* { *aymē.*
basſy.
veu.
leu.

The first Pluperfect tense. *Pleust d Dieu que,* Would God.

Sing. { loved.
I had { builded,
 { scene,
 { read,

Fuisse, tu eusses, il eust, { aymé.
or eusse. { basté.
 { ven.
 { leu.

Plur.

Plur. *Nous eussions, vous eussiez, ils eussent* } *aimé.*
bafty.
veu.
leu.

The second Pluperfect Tense, *à la même volonté que*, with a good will.

Sing. { *loved,*
I would builded,
have scene,
read, } *J'auroy, tu aurois, il auroit* { *aimé.*
bafty.
veu.
leu.

Plur. *Nous aurions, vous auriez, ils auroient* { *aimé.*
bafty.
veu.
leu.

The Subjunctive Mood is in all points like to the Optative, saving that you must apply to it the subjunctive formes afore specified, and in the future Tense, which it hath peculiar: thus:

Subjunctive future Tense, *Quand when.*

I shall { *loved,*
have builded,
scene,
read. } *J'auray, tu auras, il aura,* { *aimé.*
bafty.
veu.
leu.

Plurall. *Nous aurons, vous aurez, ils auront* { *aimé.*
bafty.
veu.
leu.

Infinitive Mood.

Present and imperfect Tense. { *Aimer, to love.*
Bastir, to build.
Voir, to see.
Lire, to read.

Preterperfect, and preterpluperfect tenses. { *Avoir aimé, to have or had loved.*
Avoir bafty, to have or had built.
Avoir veu, to have or had scene.
Avoir leu, to have or had read.

Present

Participles. { Present and imperfect, active, *aymant*, loving,
bastissant, building, *voyant*, seeing, *lisant*, reading.
 Preterperf. and preterpluperf. passive, *ayant aimé*,
 having loved, *ayant basti*, *ayant veu*, *ayant leu*.
 Preterite passive, or common, *aimé*, *aimée*, loved,
basti, *bastie*, *veu*, *veüe*, *leu*, *leuë*.

Amaturus, *qui aymera*, which shall love; *qui doit aimer*,
qui est pour aimer, *qui va aimer*, which is ready or about
 to love; *pres d'aimer*, neere loving; *voulant* or *allant*
aimer, about to love. Supines, *aimer*, *à aimer*. Gerunds,
d'aimer, of loving, *en aimant*, in loving, *pour aimer*, for
 to love, *il faut aimer*, one must love: *amandus*, to bee
 loved, *à aimer*, *qui doit estre aimé*, or *aimée*.

Verbes reciprocally, or reflexed, are all such as make
 not their transitive action from one subject into an-
 other, but the agent reciprocates its action into selfe,
 becomming both agent and patient; for it hath both
 the nominative; and also the dative or accusative, of
 one same person; whence they often inferre a passive
 sense, as *Je me delecte à l'estude*, I delight my selfe, or
 I am delighted with study, *Tu te plains à jouer*, Thou
 pleasest thy selfe in play, *Ton pere s'en fâche*, thy father
 is angry at it, &c. They are thus conjugated:

Indicative Mood, present Tense.

Je m'aime, I love my selfe, *tu t'aimes*, *il s'aime*, *nous*
nous aimons, *vous vous aimez*, *ils s'aiment*.

Je me fâche, I am angry, *tu te fâches*, *il se fâche*,
nous nous fâchons, *vous vous fâchez*, *ils se fâchent*.

Je me moque, I mocke, *tu te moques*, *il se moque*,
nous nous moquons, *vous vous moquez*, *ils se moquent*.

Imperfect Tense.

Je m'aimoy, I did love my selfe, *tu t'aimois*, *il s'aimoit*,
nous nous aimions, *vous vous aimiez*, *ils s'aimoyent*.

Je me fâchoy, I was angry, *tu te fâchois*, *il se fâchoit*,
Nous nous fâchions, *vous vous fâchiez*, *ils se fâchoient*.

Je

Je me mocquoy, I did mocke; *tu te mocquois*, il se mocquoit, *Nous nous mocquions*, vous vous mocquiez, ils se mocquoyent.

2. Preterperfect definite.

Je m'aimay, I love my selfe, *je me feschay*, I was angry, *je me mocquay*, I mocked, *tu t'aimas*, &c.

2. Preterperfect indefinite.

Je me suis aimé, I have loved my selfe, *Je me suis fesché*, I have beene angry, *Je me suis moqué*, I have mocked. { *tu t'es*, il s'est.

Nous nous sommes, vous vous estes, ils se sont { *aimé*,
aimés,
fesché,
feschés,
moqué,
moqués.

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Je m'estois aimé, I had loved my selfe, *tu t'estois*,
Je m'estois fesché, I had beene angry, *il s'estoit*,
Je m'estois moqué, I had mocked. *aimé*, &c.

Nous nous estions, vous vous estiez, ils s'estoyent. { *aimé*,
aimés,
fesché,
feschés,
moqué,
moqués.

The redoubled definite, much used.

Je me fus aimé, I had loved my selfe, *tu te fus aimé*,
il se fut aimé; *nous nous fûmes aimés*, vous vous fûtes
aimés, ils se furent aimés: so *Je me fus fesché*, I had
 beene angry.

Future Tense.

Je m'aimeray, I will love my selfe, *tu t'aimeras*, thou
 wilt love thy selfe, &c. and *Je me feschéray*, I will bee
 angry; and *je mocqueray*, I will mocke, &c.

Imperative

Imperative, *Aime-toy, qu'il s'aime, aymons-nous, aimez-vous, qu'il s'aiment.*

Optative present, and future, *à la miéne volonté que je m'aime, que tu t'aimes, &c.*

1. Imperfect, *Pleust à Dieu que ie m'aimasse, que tu t'aimasses, qu'il s'aimast, or aimasse, &c.*

2. Imperfect, *Volontiers je m'aimerois, tu t'aimerois, &c.*

Preterperfect Tense, *à la miéne volonté, que ie me sois aimé, tu te sois aimé, il se soit aimé, nous nous soyons aimés, vous vous soyez aimés, ils se soient aimés.*

1. Preterpluperfect, *Pleust à Dieu que, Je me fusse aimé, tu te fusses aimé, &c.*

2. Pluperfect, *Volontiers Je me serois aimé, tu te serois aimé, &c.*

Subjunctive, future, *Quand je me seray aimé, tu te seras aimé, &c.*

Infinitive pres. and imperf. *M'aimer, t'aimer, s'aimer, nous aimer, vous aimer, s'aimer.*

Perfect and pluperfect, *M'estre aimé, t'estre aimé, s'estre aimé, &c.*

Participle present and imperf. *M'aimant, t'aimant, s'aimant, &c.*

Preterperfect and Pluperfect, *M'estant aimé, t'estant aimé, &c.*

Here two things are to be noted; First, that in the compound Tenses, the auxiliar *Je suis* is used in stead of *Jay*. Secondly, that the Participle common followes ever the Gender and number of the Substantive that is the patient; as, *Ceste femme s'est fardée*, this woman is painted, or hath painted her selfe; *Et ses amoureux s'y sont abusés*, and her lovers have been deceived by it, or have deceived themselves by it.

All Verbes active may thus bee reciprocated. But there are some Verbes which move alone according to this forme; as, *Je me souvien*, I remember: *Je me repen*,

repent, I repent; *Je m'abstien*, I abstaine; *Je me comporte*, I behave my selfe: *Je m'esbahy*, I wonder: *Je m'esmerveille*, I marvell; *Je me mocque*, &c. which three last may also be used in the sense and conjugation passive; as, *Je suis esbahi*, I am abashed or astonished; *Je suis esmerveillé*, I wonder: *Je suis moqué*, I am mocked.

Verbes neuters are such as containe in themselves an effect which is not produced in any other subject. Some of these do, first, appropriate to themselves the active forme; as, *Je dors*, I sleep, whose Preterperfect is *J'ay dormy*, *Je vy*, I live, *J'ay vescu*: so *Je sue*, *Je tremble*, *Je frissonne*, *Je gele*, and some others, which we referre to the disposition active. Secondly, others there are which have a double use and sense: which imployed actively have the active conjugation, but in the neuter sense have the neuter; as *Je crois*, I grow; which, signifying actively, I give growth to some thing, hath its Preterperfect *J'ay cru*; but signifying, I grow in my selfe, hath its Preterperfect *Je suis cru*. So *J'adoucy* hath, *J'ay adoucy*, and *Je suis adoucy*: and of these we will give a long list anon. Thirdly, there are others which have only the disposition neuter, & none other; as, *Naistre*, *mourir*, *aller*, *choir*, *tomber*, *venir*, *retourner*, *issir*, &c. which have their effect in a locall moving: yet some of these may have also an active transitive sense, and active conjugation: *Nous avons toute la matinée couru le lièvre*, we have all the morning runne (or hunted) the Hare; here *courir* is active. *Si tost que nous avons ouï l'alarme*, now y sommes courus; so soone as we heard the alarm, we ranne thither; here *courir* is neuter. And of this sort are these; *Arriver*, *aborder*, *descendre*, *entrer*, *evader*, *eschaper*, *escamper*, *suir*, *monter*, *passer*, *sortir*, *partir*, to depart, and perhaps some others: which when they have an accusative case after them, are actives; if without any after them, are neuters, because their effect finisheth

in themselves. For conjugating of these; see the Verbe *Aller*; hereafter. Now of the second sort are Verbes, which according to the diverse conjugating and syntax applied to them, may bee Actives transitives, Reciprocals and Neuters; namely, *Aborder, abaisser, aboutir, abreger, accourir, adoucir, affoiblir, affermir, asadir, agrandir, agrestir, aigrir, alentir, alonger, aliger, a-eunir, amaigrir, amender, amenuiser, amollir, amoindrir, anéantir, anonchatur, amoitir, apatiffier, apauvrir, apesantir, aprivoiser, ardre or ardoir, arondir, offrir, attiedir, attendre, assagir, augmenter, avachir, affecter. Baisser, bander, blanchir, bouger, branler, brusier, bruner, blondir. Charger, charger, croistre, chanzir, crouler. Diminuer, dégeler, déloger, décliner, dévoler, durcir. Embellir, enlaidir, encherir, encliner, endurcir, enorgueillir, enforcer, engourdir, engrossir, enhardir, engraisser, emmaigrir, enrichir, envenimer, empirer, envieiller, esclairer, esclaireir, espaisir, eslargir, estreoir, esjoigner, esvanoir. Fener, fanir or fager, flestrir, fléchir, finir. Grestir or graissier, grossir, griller, grouler, guerir, haussier, jaunir, lasther, loger, Meurir, moitir, moisir, mollir, multiplier, monter, mourvoir, mouuer, muër. Noircir, nicher, Piler, plomber, pourrir, profiter, panther, Rabaisser, ravalier, rancir, reboucher, remuer, rencherir, renforcer, restreoir, reverdir, rajeunir, roidir, rostir, rougir, roussir, reculer, Saigner, sonner, seicher, Trainer, tremper, tarir. Verdir, vieillir, venter. Example; *Le Soleil mollit la cire, & durcit la fange*; the Sunne softneth wax, and hardneth dirt. *La cire mollit, or s'amollit au Soleil; & la fange y durcit, or s'y endureit*; wax softneth, or is softned at the Sunne; and dirt thereby hardneth, or is thereby hardned. *La rosée blanchit la toille*, the dew whiteneth cloth. *La toille blanchit, or se blançit par la rosée*, cloth whiteneth, or is whitened by the dew, &c.*

Verbes

Verbs Passives are conjugated throughout, by means of the auxiliar Verbe *Je suis*, and the Participle Passive; as Indicative present Tense, *Je suis aimé*, I am loved; *Tu es aimé*, thou art loved; *Il est aimé*, he is loved, &c. Imperfect; *J'étois aimé*, I was loved, and so forwards: *Je fu aimé*, *J'ay esté aimé*, *J'avois esté aimé*, *Je seray aimé*, &c. and in all other Moods & Tenses using the auxiliar *Je suis*, and the aforesaid Participle: which Participle varieth in Gender and Number; as, *Je suis aimé*, masculine; *aimée*, feminine: Plurall, *Nous sommes aimés*, masc. *aimées*, fem.

CHAP. VI.

Of Verbes Anomala or Irregular.

THUS have we run over the kinds of Verbes, and shewed the conjugating of the regulars, now we come to the heteroclites and irregulars. But first note, that the verbs of the first conjugation, which are almost infinite in number, are all regular, saving that in some phrases we say *gard'* in stead of *garde*; as, *Dieu gard' la compagnie*, God save thy company, *Dieu vous gard' de mal*, God keepe you from evill. Also we say, *Doint* for *donne*, as *Dieu vous doint heureuse & longue vie*, God give you an happy and long life; and in the future Indicative we say, *donray*, for *donneray*; and in the second imperfect optative, *donroy*, for *donneroy*: So also in the verbe *Laisser*, we say *Lairray*, *lairrois*, in the same tenses, for *Laisseray*, *laisserois*; and sometimes (though seldome) *amerray*, *amerrois*, for *ameneray*, *amenerois*. Lastly, except the verbe *Aller*, to goe, a verbe neuter, Heteroclite, and irregular: Yet, for it frequent use, worth your learning throughout.

Indicative

Indicative mood, present tense. I goe.

Je vay, vais; or vois, tu vas, il va: Nous allons, vous allez, ils vont.

Imperfect, I did goe, *J'allois, tu allois, il alloit: nous allions, vous alliez, ils alloient.*

1. Perfect definite, I went, *J'allay, tu allas, il alla: nous allâmes, vous allâtes, ils allèrent.*

2. Preterfect tense indefinite;

I have gone.

Je suis allé, tu es allé, il est allé; nous sommes allés, vous êtes allés, ils sont allés.

Preterpluperfect tense, I had gone.

J'estoy allé, tu estois allé, il estoit allé; nous estions allés, vous estiez allés, ils estoient allés.

The redoubled definite, much used; I had gone.

Je fu allé, tu fus allé, il fut allé; nous fûmes allés, vous fûtes allés, ils furent allés.

The redoubled indefinite; I had gone.

J'ay esté allé, tu as esté allé, il a esté allé; nous avons esté allés, vous avez esté allés, ils ont esté allés.

Future, I will goe, *J'iray, tu iras, il ira; nous irons, vous irez, ils iront.*

Imperative, goe thou, *va, qu'il aille, or voise; Allons, allez, qu'ils aillent, or voisent.*

Optative mood, present and future, *Dieu vueille que, God grant I may goe, J'aie, or voisse, tu ailles or voisses, il aille, or voise: nous allions, or voisions, vous alliez, or voisie, ils aillent, or voisent.*

1. Imperfect. *Pleust à Dieu que, Would*

God I did go, or, I went.

J'allasse, tu allasses, il allast, or allast; nous allassions, or allissions, vous allassiez, or allissiez, ils allassent.

2. Imperfect. *Volontiers, I willingly would goe, J'irois, tu irois, il iroit: nous irions, vous iriez, ils iroient.*

Preterperfect. *Je prie Dieu que*, I pray God
I have gone.

Je soye allé, tu sois allé, il soit allé; Nous soyons allés, vous soyez allés, ils soient allés.

1. Preterpluperfect. *Pleust à Dieu que*, Would
God I had gone.

Je fusse allé, tu fusses allé, il fust, or fusse allé; Nous fussions allés, vous fussiez allés, ils fussent allés.

2. Pluperfect. *Volontiers*, willingly I had gone,
or would have gone.

Je seroy allé, tu serois allé, il seroit allé; Nous serions allés, vous seriez allés, ils seroient allés.

The Subjunctive is as the Optative, except this future, *Quand*, When I shall goe, or be gone.

Je seray allé, tu seras allé, il sera allé; Nous serons allés, vous serez allés, ils seront allés.

Infinitive, *Aller*, to goe, *Estre allé*, to be, or to have
or had gone.

Participles, *Allant*, going. *Estant allé*, being or
having gone. *Allé, allés, Allée, allées.* } gone.

The Heteroclites, and Anomala's of the other three
conjugations now follow; or which wee will onely set
downe the five maine parts, afore mentioned, from
which all the other may bee deduced.

Of the second conjugation.

Note first, that all the verbs of the three conjugations
following, make the third person singular of the present
Indicative, and of the first preterperfect, in *r*, or *d*, as *il*
guérit, il void, or voit, il prend.

2. That the second person, in those same tenses, is
usurped often for the first: so that we may say, *Je guery,*
or *je guéris, Je voy, or je vois, Je pren, or je prens.* Yet
from this rule are excepted these verbs, *j'ouvre, je couvre,*
J'offre, je souffre, & their compounds: also *Je cueille.*

J'assaille, J'assault, tu assaills, il assault, Nous as-
saillons,

saillons, &c. Definite, *F'assailly*. Indefinit, *F'ay assailly*. Infinitive, *Assaillir*. Participle, *Assaillant*. Fut. *F'assailiray*, or *j'assaudray*.

So *Tressaillir*, & *Sursaillir*. The simple verb *Saillir*, to leape, wants the singular of the present Indicative; & (consequently) the second person singular of the Imperative: the rest is whole.

¶ I blesse, *Je beny*, and the third person plurall, *benissent*, or *benient*. *Je beny*, or *benis*. *F'ay benit*. *Benir*, and in old time, *benire*, or *benistre*.

¶ I boile, *Je boils*, plur. *Nous boüillons*: *Je boüilly*, *j'ay boüilly*, or *boüillu*; *Boüillir*. *Boüillant*. Fut. *Je boüilliray*, or *boudray*. Thus *Esboüillir*, *Reboüillir*.

¶ I make a noise, *Je brui*, *Je brui*, *j'ay bruit*. *Bruir*, or *bruire*. *Bruyant*.

¶ I runne, *Je cour*, *je couru*, *F'ay couru*, or *je suis couru*, or *je m'en suis couru*. *Courir*, or *courre*, with some. *Courant*. Future, *Je courray*. So *Accourir*, *Recourir*, *Encourir*; also *secourir* and *discourir*, saving that they have not the neuter conjugating.

¶ I cover, *Je couvre*, *Je couvry*, *F'ay couvert*, *Couvrir*, *Couvrant*. So it compounds *descouvrir*, *recouvrir*; also *ouvrir*, *offrir*, and *souffrir*.

¶ *Je cueuls*, *tu cueuls*, *il cueult*, or which is more used, *Je cueille*, *tu cueilles*, *il cueille*, *nous cueillons*.

Je cueilly, *j'ay cueilly*, *Cueillir*, *Cueillant*. Future, *Je cueilliray*, or *cueilleray*; *cueudray*, out of use.

¶ I circumsise, *Je circonc*, or *cis*; *Je circonc*, or *cis*; *F'ay circoncis*, *Circoncir*, or *Circoncire*; *Circoncisant*, or *Circonciant*.

¶ I sleepe, *Je dors*, *tu dors*, *il dort*; *nous dormons*, *Je dormy*, *F'ay dormy*, *Dormir*, *Dormant*.

¶ I square, *F'esquarre*, *j'esquarny*, *j'ay esquarry*: *Esquarrir*, *Esquarrant*.

¶ I faile, *Je fais*, *tu fais*, *il fait*, *nous faillons*: *Je failly*, *j'ay failly*, *faillir*, *faillant*, *Je failliray*, or *saudray*.

Thus *Defaillir*.

¶ I strike, *Je fiér*, *Je fery*, or *feru*, *J'ay feru*, *Ferir*, *fiérant*.

¶ I flee, *Je fui*, *Je fui*, *J'ay fui*, *Je suis fui*, or *je m'en suis fui*, or *fuit* : *fuir*, or *fuire*, *fuyant*. So *Enfuir*, and *Refuir*, also *Deuir*, saving that it is onely actively, not passively.

¶ I lye downe, or in child-bed, *Je gis*, *Je gesi*, *J'ay gesi*, *Gesir*, *gisant*. Future, *Gesiray*, or *giray*, or *gerray*, of the old infinitive *Gerre*.

¶ I have, *Je hay*, *Je hai*, *J'ay hai*, *Hair*, *Hayant*, or *haissant* : Future, *Hairay*, or *hairay*.

I issue forth, *J'issi*, or *J'is*, *J'issi*, *Je suis issu*, *Issir*, Fut. *Issiray*.

¶ I die, *Je meurs*, *tu meurs*, *il meurt*, *Nous mourons*, *Je mouru*, *Je suis mort*, *Mourir*, *mourant* : Future, *Je mourray*. Reciprocated, *Je me meurs*, *tu te meurs*, &c.

¶ I lie, *Je mens*, *Je menty*, *J'ay menty*, *Mentir*, *Mentant*. So *Démentir*.

¶ I heare, *J'oy*, *J'oüy*, *J'ay oüy*, *Oüy*, *Oyant* : Future *Orray*, or *oiray*. So *entroyr*.

¶ I depart, *Je pars*, *Je party*, *J'ay party*, or *Je suis party*, *Partir*, *Partant*. So *Repartir*, *Departir*, *Compartir* and *Mpartir*.

¶ I stinke, *Je pu*, *tu pus*, *il put*, *Nous puons*, *Je pui*, *J'ay pui*. *Puir*, *putant*, or *puant*, Fut. *puray*.

¶ I seeke, or fetch, *Je quier*, *Je quis*, *J'ay quis*, *Querir* or *querre*, *querant*, Future, *Querray*. So *Acquerir*, *conquerir*, *enquerir*, *requerir*.

¶ I feele, *Je sen*, *Je senty*, *J'ay senty*, *Sentir*, *sentant*. So *consentir*, *dissentir*, *ressentir*.

¶ I serve, *Je sers*, *Je servy*, *J'ay servy*, *Servir*, *servant*. So *Reservoir*, and *desservir*.

¶ I repent, *Je me repen*, *Je me repenty*, *Je me suis repenty*, *Se repentir*, *Se repentant*.

¶ I goe

¶ I goe forth, *Je sors, Je sorty, J'ay sorty, or Je suis sorty, Sortir, sortant.*

¶ I hold, *Je tien, tu tiens, il tient, Nous tenons, vous tenez, ils tiennent, Je tins, and the third plurall, ils tindrent; J'ay tenu, or of some tins. Tenir, Tenant, Fut. Je tiendray. So Appartenir, contenir, detenir, entretenir, maintenir, obtenir, retenir, soustenir.*

¶ I take away, *Je tolly, Je tolly, or tollu, J'ay tolly, or tollu, Tollir, tollissant.*

¶ I come, *Je vien, Je vins, Je suis venu, Venir, Venant: Fut. Je viendray, and the third person plurall of the first perfect tense definite, Vindrent, as afore in Je tien. So Avenir, devenir, revenir, provenir, parvenir, survenir, intervenir, &c. But prevenir and subvenir, have the active and passive forme; and Convenir, the active or neuter indifferently.*

¶ I clothe, or put on, *Je vests, or vestis, Je vesty, J'ay vestu, vestir, vestant, or vestissant. So Devestir, revestir, &c.*

Of the third Conjugation.

¶ I appeare, *J'apper, or J'apparay, J'apparu, or paru. Apparoir, or Apparoistre.*

¶ I perceive, *J'apperçoy, ois, oit, nous appercevons, ez, ils apperçoivent. J'apperceu, J'ay apperceu, Appercevoir, Appercevant: Fut. J'apperceuray. So Concevoir, Decevoir, Recevoir, Devoir, and Ramentevoir; whose presents indicative are, Je conçois, Je deçois, Je reçois, Je doy, Je ramentoy.*

Avoir is already before conjugated.

¶ I fall, *Je che, tu chés, il chet; Nous chéons: Je cheu, J'ay cheu, or Je suis cheu, Cheoir, cheant. Fut. Je cheray. So Decheoir, Escheoir, and Recheoir.*

¶ *Chaloir, and Faloir, are meereely impersonalls; of which hereafter.*

¶ I grieve, *Je deuls, Je doulu, J'ay doulu; Douloir, Deulant, or Dueillant, Dueilleray.*

It is most used reciprocally, thus: *Je me deult, tu te deult, il se deult. Nous nous dueillons, or doulons, vous vous dueillez, ils se dueillent, or deulent. Je me dueilly, or doutu. Je me suis doutu. Se doulouir. Se dueillant, or doulant. Je me deurray. So Condouloir.*

¶ I move, *Je meus, eus, eut. Nous mouvons, ez, ils meurent, or mourvent. Je meu. J'ay meu. Mourvoir, or meuvir. Mourvant. Fut. Je meurray. Moureray, or meureray. So Esmouvoir, demouvoir, &c.*

¶ I raine, *Je pleu. Je plu. J'ay plu. Pleuvir. Pleuvant. Pleuvray. It is used impersonally: Il pleut, il plut, Il a plu, &c.*

¶ I can, *Je puis, or Je peux, tu peux, il peut; nous pouvons, ez, peuvent. Je peu, j'ay peu. Pourvoir, pouvant. Fut. Je pourray. Present Opt. Je puisse.*

¶ I know, *Je sçay, tu sçais, il sçait. Nous sçavons, vez, veut. Je sceu, j'ay sceu. Sçavoir. Sçavant. Imperative, Sçache, qu'il sçache, sçachons, &c.*

¶ I sit, *Je sieds, or sied, tu sieds, il sied. Nous séons, ez, ils séent. Je sis, j'ay sis. Seoir, or soir. Séant, or siésant, Fut. Je sieray, or serreray, or siéseray. Thus Sursoir, Asoir, and Rassoir. These verbs, and Asoir, Rassoir, are often used as Reciprocalls. Also this is much used impersonally. Il sied, il séoit, or siésoit. The Preterperfect are not used, but supplied by the Participle. Il fut séant, il a esté séant. Il siera. Infinitive, Estre séant. Thus it signifieth to sit well, or become.*

¶ *Souloir*, is a verbe defective; in the plurall of the present indicative, it hath *Nous soulons*. Imperfect, *Je soulois, ois, oit: Nous soulions, ieux, ils souloyent*. Infinitive, *souloir*, to be wont. All the rest is wanting, and supplied by the Verbe *Accoustumer*; as, *Je suis accoustumé, &c.*

¶ I am worth, or of value, *Je vau, or vauz, tu vauz, il vaut: Nous vallons, ez, ils valient, or valent. Je valu, j'ay valu. Valoir. Valant. Je vaudray. Imperative, vauz;*

*v*aux, qu'il *v*ale, or *v*aille, *v*alons, *v*alez, qu'ils *v*alent, or *v*ailent.

¶ I will, *J*e *v*ueil, or more in use, *J*e *v*eux, tu *v*eux, il *v*eut : *N*ous *v*oulons, *e*x, ils *v*eulement, *J*e *v*oulu, j'*a*y *v*oulu, *v*ouloir, *v*oulant, *J*e *v*oudray. Imperative (of little use) *v*eux, qu'il *v*euile, or *v*ueille : *v*oulons, *e*x, qu'ils *v*eulement, or *v*ueillent. Present Optative, *J*e *v*euile, or *v*ueille, or *v*euille. The first imperfect Optative, *J*e *v*oulusse, or *v*oufusse.

Of the fourth Conjugation.

¶ I burne, *F*ards, j'*a*rdy, j'*a*y ars. *A*rdre, or *a*rdoir. *A*rdant. *F*ardray. So *E*spardre.

¶ I wait, *F*atten, j'*a*tendy, *F*'ay attendu. *A*tendre. *A*ttendant. *F*'attendray. So also *T*endre, *d*estendre, *e*stendre, *e*ntendre, *p*retendre; also *F*endre, *d*efendre, *p*oursendre; and *P*endre, *d*espendre, *r*espandre, *r*ependre, *s*uspendre, *e*spandre, *v*endre, *d*escendre, *c*ondescendre, *r*endre. But *d*escendre hath it Preterperfect, *F*'ay, or *J*e suis *d*escendu.

¶ I beat, *J*e bas, tu bas, il bat : nous batons, *J*e baty, j'*a*y battu. *B*atire, battant. *J*e batray, soit compounds.

¶ I drinke, *J*e boy, ois, ois : *N*ous beuvons, *e*x, ils boivent, or *beu*vent, *J*e beu, j'*a*y beu, *B*oire, *B*euuant. *J*e boiray, or *beuray*.

¶ I bray, *J*e bray, je bray, j'*a*y brait, *B*raire, brayant.

¶ *B*ruy, is before in the second.

¶ I gird, *J*e ceins, tu ceins, il ceint : *N*ous ceignons, *J*e ceigny, j'*a*y ceint, *C*eindre, *C*eignant.

In like manner, *C*raindre, *A*streindre, *e*streindre, *c*ontraindre, *f*eindre, *t*eindre, *p*eindre, *r*estreindre, *o*indre, *j*oindre, *e*nfraindre, and all in *a*indre, *e*indre, and *o*indre, saving these three, *A*veindre, *T*eindre, and *E*steindre, which are thus conjugated.

¶ I Colour, or dye, *J*e *T*ein, je teigny, or teindy, j'*a*y teint, *T*eindre, *T*eignant, or teindant : so the others.

¶ I shut, *J*e clos, je closi, j'*a*y clos, *C*lorre, closant. So *E*nclore, *f*orclorre, *e*sclore, *r*enclore.

¶ I conclude, *Je conclu*, or *clus* : nous concluons, je conclus, j'ay conclus; Conclurre, Concluant. *Je concluray*. So *exclurre*, *reclurre*, and *forclurre*.

¶ I confect, *Je confis*, je confis, j'ay confit, confire, or *confir*, *confisant*. So *déconfire*.

¶ I sew, *Je couds* : nous cousons, je couds, or *cousu*, j'ay *cousu*, *Coudre*, *cousant*. So *découdre*, *recoudre*.

¶ I beleeve, *Je croy*, je creu, j'ay creu, *Croire*, *croyant*. So *Mescroire*, *descroire*; *Accroire* hath but the infinit.

¶ I grow, *Je croy*, or *crois* : nous croissons, je creu, j'ay creu, or j'suis creu. *Croistre*, *croissant*, je *croistray*. So *Accroistre*, *descroistre*, *parcroistre*, *surcroistre*.

¶ I seethe, *Je cuis*, nous cuisons, je cuisi, j'ay cuit, *cuire*, *cuisant*. So *Decuire*, *recuire*; also *duire*, *conduire*, *deduire*, *induire*, *produire*, *reduire*, *introduire*, *esconduire*, *seduire*, *traduire* : also *Construire*, *destruire*, *infruire*.

¶ I say, *Je dy*, *tudis*, *il dit* : Nous disons, vous dites, ils disent, or *d'ent*, je dis, j'ay dit, *Dire*, *disant*.

Imperative *Di*, qu'il dise, or die, *Disons*, *dites*, qu'ils disent or dient. Present optative, que je dise or die, tu dises, or dies, il dise or die, *disions*, *disiez*, *disent* or *dient*. So *contredire*, *desdire*, *maudire*, *mesdire*, *predire*, *redire*; saving that *maudire* hath it participle *maudissant*.

¶ I write, *J'escry* : nous *escrivons*, j'escrivy, j'ay *escrit*, *escrire*, *escrivant*. So *descrire*, *inscrire*, *prescrire*, *proscrire*, *rescrire*, *souscrire*, *transcrire*.

¶ I frye, *Je fry* : je fry, j'ay frit, *frire*, *friant*.

¶ I know, *Je cognoy*, or *connoy* : nous *connoissons*, je *conneu*, j'ay *connu*, *Connoistre*, *connoissant*. So *Desconnoistre*, *mesconnoistre*, *reconnoistre*.

¶ I melt, *Je fon*, or *fons* : nous *fondons*, je *fondy*, j'ay *fondu*, *fondre*, *fondant*. So *Confondre*, *morfondre*, *resondre*; also *Tondre*, *respondre*, *correspondre*; also *Rompre*.

¶ I make, or doe, *Je fay*, *ais*, *ait* : Nous *faisons*, vous *faites*, ils *font*, *Je fi*, or *fey*, j'ay *fait*, *Faire*, *faisant*, je *feray*.
Imperative,

Imperative, *Fay*, qu'il fasse, faisons, faites, qu'ils fassent.
 Present optative, *que je fasse*. So *Defaire*, contrefaire,
forfaire, *meffaire*, *parfaire*, *refaire*, *satisfaire*, *surfaire*.

¶ I shine, *Je luy*, je luy si, j'ay luy, luire, luyfant. So
Reluire, entreluire; also *Nuire*.

¶ I put, *Je mets*, je mis, j'ay mis, *Mettre*, mettant. So
Admettre, commettre, demettre, permettre, promettre.

¶ I bite, *Je mor*: nous mordons, je mordy, j'ay mors,
 or mordu, mordre, mordant. So *demordre*, *remordre*; also
Tordre, *détordre*, *retordre*.

¶ I grind, *Je mouds*, or *meuds*, je moulu, j'ay moulu,
Moudre, or *meudre*, *Moulant*, or *meulant*. So *Es-*
moudre.

¶ I am borne, *Je nais*, je nasquy, je suis nay, , or né.
Naistre, or *nasquair*, not so much used. *Naissant*, *Je*
naistray, or *nasquiray*, seldome used.

¶ I absolve, *F'absouds*, j'absolu, je absout, or absolu,
Absoudre, *Absolvant*. So *Dissoudre*.

¶ I slay, *F'occy*: nous occions, or occisons. *F'occis*, j'ay
 occis, *Occire*, or *occir*, occiant.

¶ I feed, *Je pais*: nous paissions, je peu, j'ay peu, *pai-*
stre, *paissant*. So *Repaisire*.

¶ I lose, *Je pers*; nous perdons, je perdy, j'ay perdu,
Perdre, *Perdant*. So *Reperdre*.

¶ I please, *Je plais*: nous plaisons. je pleu, j'ay pleu,
plaire, *plaisant*. So *complaire*, *desplaire*.

¶ I lay an egge, *Je pons*, or *ponds*, je pondy, or ponny,
 or ponnu. *F'ay ponds*, or *pondu*, or *ponnu*, *Pondre*, *pon-*
nant, or *pondant*.

¶ I take, *Je pren*: nous prenons, je prin, prins, or
 pris, j'ay pris, or prins, *prendre*, *prenant*.

The third person plurall of the definite, *ils prin-*
drent, or *prirent*. So *Apprendre*, *comprendre*, *desapren-*
dre, *entreprendre*, *essrendre*, *messrendre*, *reprendre*, *sur-*
prendre.

¶ I shave, *Je ray*, tu rais, il rait: *Nous rasons*, j'ay
 rais,

rais, raire, je rairay. Imperative, *Ray.*

¶ I laugh, *Je ry, j' ry, j'ay ry, je riray, rire, riant.*

¶ I summon, *Je semonds, je semonni or semondi: J'ay semonnu, or semons, semondre, semonnant, or semondant.*

¶ I solve, *Je souds, je solu, or solvi, j'ay solu, soudre, solvant.*

¶ I rise or spring up, *Je sourds, je sourdy, j'ay sours, sourdre, sourdant.* It is more used impersonally, *Il sourd, il sourdit, il est sourd, il sourdra.*

¶ I follow, *Je suy: Nous suivons, je suivy, j'ay suivy, Suivre, or suivre* little used. *Suivant.* So *Atconsuivre, ensuivre, entresuivre, poursuivre.*

¶ I am silent, *Je tay, je teu, j'ay teu, taire, taisant.* Or rather *Je me tay, je me teu, je me suis teu, je me tairay.*

¶ I draw, *Je tray, je trahy, j'ay trait, traire, trayant.* So *Attraire, distraire, extraire, pourtraire, soustraire, fortraire.*

¶ I weave, *Je tis, je tissi, j'ay tissu, Tistre, or tisser, Tissant, je tistray.*

¶ I overcome, *Je vaine, or vains, or vainqs, Je vainquy, j'ay vaincu, vaincre, vainquant, Je vaincray.* So *survaincre, convaincre.*

¶ I live, *Je vy: Nous vivons, Je vesquy, or vescu, J'ay vescu, vivre, vivant.* So *revivre, and survivre.*

Of Verbes Impersonalls.

To conjugate verbs impersonalls, is to runne through all the third persons singular, according to the conjugation unto which they belong; which is knowne by the termination of their infinitives. We have two sorts of Impersonalls: one, which seemeth of a passive sense, hath *On*, or *Lon* afore it, as *On dit, dicitur*, men say, they say, or it is said. *On ayme*, one loveth, men love, they love. *On est aimé*, one is loved, men are loved. *On court*, men runne, they runne, or one runneth, &c. Another sort are actives, and have afore them the partic.

Il, it, or there. All of the first conjugation are regular, except *Il va*; as *Il reste*, *il fâche*, *il tarde*, *il soucie*, *il conste*, *il couste*, *il griève*, *il poise*, or *pèse*, *il importe*, *il manque*, *il regne*, *il profite*, *il tombe*, *il arrive*, *il semble*, *il demange*, *il gele*, *il tonne*, *il gresse*, *il esclaire*, *il neige*, *il se trouve*, *il se controuve*, *il s'invente*, *il se forge*, *il se mesle*, *il se range*, &c. Of the second, *Il vient*, *il convient*, *il advient*, *il intervient*, *il provient*, *il souvient*, *il rient*, *il appartient*, *il sert*, *il court*, *il meurt*, *il sort*, *il se nourrit*, *il se pourrit*, *il se ravit*, &c. Of the third, *Il sied*, *il chet*, *il eschet*, *il vaut*, *il faut*, *il chaut*, *il deut*, *il pert*, *il appert*, *il apparoit*, *il pleut*, *il y a*, *il se void*, *il se croit*, *il se reçoit*, *il s'apperçoit*, &c. Of the fourth, *Il est*, *il sourd*, *il naist*, *il prend*, *il pend*, *il cuit*, *il duit*, *il nuit*, *il suffit*, *il fait*, *il se fait*, *il plaist*, *il croist*, *il se met*, *il se permet*, *il s'ensuit*, *il se commet*, *il se rompt*, *il se perd*, &c. In a word, all verbes actives and passives may become impersonalls, by setting *il*, with the pronoun *se*, afore their third persons, as *Il se prouve*, *il se traite*, *il se rencontre*, *il se sème*, *il se cueille*, *il se convertit*, *il se divertit*, *il s'esclaircit*, &c. Infinitely.

Il faut, *il chaut*, *il vaut*, are thus conjugated, *Il faut*, it behooveth. Imperfect, *Il falloit*, perfect, *il faut*. 2. Perfect, *Il a valu*. Infinitive, *valoir*. Future, *il faudra*. Opt. present, *il faille*. So *Il chaut*, *Il chaloit*, &c. *Il vaut*, *il valoit*, &c. *Il y a* is conjugated throughout the third persons singular of *Avoir*, putting *Il* and *y* afore; as *Il y a*, there is, *il y avoit*, there was, *Il y eut*, there was, *Il y a eu*, there hath been, *Il y avoit eu*, there had bin, *Il y aura*, there shall be, &c. *Il loist*, is defective, and hath onely *Il loist*, it is lawfull, *Il loisoit*, and present Optat. *Il loyse*. *Affiert*, is also defective. and hath onely, *il affiert*, it belongeth, or is the dutie, *Il afferoit*, *Il afferà*, and present optat. *qu'il affère*.

CHAP. VII.

Of Adverbs, and the other undeclinable parts.

VERY many Adverbs (especially of quality) are made (as also in English) of adjectives, by adding to the termination *Ment*, as in English the termination *Ly*, as *Sagement* wisely, *prudemment*, prudently, *legerement*, lightly, *abondamment*, abundantly, *secondement*, secondly, *superfluement*, superfluously, &c. And sometimes Adjectives themselves are put for adverbs, as *Parlez clair* for *clairement*, speake plainly. *Allez vite* for *vistement*, goe quickly. So *juste*, *fort*, *droit*, *haut*, *leger*, *soudain*, and many others are used.

The other Adverbs, Conjunctions, Prepositions, &c. because they doe often much trouble the learner, I thought good here, though promiscuously and disorderly, yet alphabetically, to set downe for their better finding; at least, so many of them as doe most frequently occurre.

A to, at, in, by, for.
à l'advenir, in time to come.
à cause, by cause.
à costé, *à costiere*, aside, side-wise.
à coup, at once, speedily.
à coup perdu, in vaine.
à tous coups, est-soones.
à la droite, on the right hand.
à la gauche, on the left hand.
à fin que, *à ce que*, *à fin*

de, to the end that.
à la fin, in the end.
à la parfin, at the last.
à peine, scarcely.
à grand peine, with much adoe.
à heure, in time.
à l'heure, at the houre.
à la bonne heure, luckily, in good time.
à cette heure, now.
à l'instant, at that instant.
alors que, then when.
à l'heure que, at the houre when.

à chef

à chef de piece , in the end,
at length.
Aga, see, looke.
à jamais, for ever.
à tout jamais , or à tous-
jours mais , for ever and
ever.
à raison dequoy , by reason
whereof.
à l'escart, à quartier, apart,
aside, afunder.
à part, aside, apart.
à l'escient, wittingly, or of
set purpose.
à bon escient , in good ear-
nest.
à guise, à la guise , à mode,
à la mode , after the ma-
ner or fashion.
à l'entour, about, or round
about.
à couvert, covertly.
à découvert , openly.
Ains , ainçois , or ainçois,
but, but rather, ere.
Ainçois que, albeit.
Ainsi, so, as, like as.
Ainsi que , so as, whilst
that, like as.
Ailleurs, elsewhere.
Alors , then , Alors que,
when, then when.
à la volée , rashly , at ran-
dome.
à l'endroit , to the right
place.

à l'environ , thereabouts,
round abouts.
à condition que , à la char-
ge que , on condition
that.
à raison que , à mesure que,
by measure, or degrees
as, even as, by how much
as.
à droit , by right.
à tort, wrongfully, wrong.
à point, aptly, in due time.
à bon droit, by good right.
à temps, in time.
à point nommé , in good
time, at the time appoin-
ted, fitly.
à la hâte, hastily, in hast.
à la chaude , hotly , in a
heat.
Ainsi comme , like as.
à l'aide, au secours , helpe,
helpe.
à l'arme, arme, arme.
Au meurtre , murder, mur-
der.
Au feu, fire, fire, &c.
à l'encontre, against.
Après, after.
à plus près , within a lit-
tle.
à peu près , or au peu près,
well-nerre, almost.
Au plus près , , as neere as
may be.
à l'envi, in despite, or emu-
lation,

- lation, or strife one of another.
- à qui mieux, mieux*, with strife who shall do best.
- à qui pis-pis*, with strife who shall do worst.
- à l'adventure*, by chance.
- à tout hazard*, at all adventure.
- à tant*, thus, by this, hereupon.
- à pur*, & *à plain*, flatly, plainly.
- à plein*, fully.
- à clair*, cleerely.
- à net*, neatly, *au net*, exactly, perfectly.
- à sec*, as *estre à sec*, to bee on dry ground, or gravelled.
- à profit de mesnage*, roundly, thoroughly, to purpose.
- à nud*, *mettre à nud*, to strip.
- à blanc*, *mettre à blanc*, to strip into the shirt.
- à la pareille*, for the like good turne, so *au reciproque*.
- à matin*, at morning, *au matin*, in the morning.
- à soir*, at evening, *au soir*, in the evening.
- arriere*, behinde: away, no more. *à sçavoir*, to wit, that is to say.
- à sçavoir-mon*, whether or no?
- à tout le moins*, *au moins*, the least, at least.
- à l'impourveu*, *à despourveu*, *à l'improvisé*, *au dépourveu*, at unavares, suddenly, unlooked for.
- à l'estourdy*, amazedly, heedlessly, rashly.
- assez*, enough.
- assez long-temps*, a very long time.
- attendu que*, seeing that, or considering that.
- à travers*, *au travers*, athwart, crossly.
- assez peu*, little enough.
- à rebours*, *au rebours*, *à contre-pied*, *à contre-poil*, backward, contrariwise, against the hair, kinkam.
- au contraire*, on the contrary.
- au*, and plurall number *aux*, to the, at the, in the, for the.
- au moyen de quoy*, by means whereof.
- au plus*, at the most.
- au moins*, at the least.
- avant*, before, forth, forward. *Avant-hier*, two dayes ago. *Avec*, with. *Avec ce*, with all.

Avec

Avec le temps, at length,
in time.

Au dedans, within, in-
wardly.

Au dehors, without, out-
wardly.

au loing, afar off, aloof off.

aucune fois, sometime.

au derriere, behind.

au devant par derriere, the
wrong way.

au devant, before.

au dessus, above, on high.

au dessous, under, beneath,
below, underneath.

au deçà, on this side, on
the hither side.

au delà, on that side, be-
yond, on the further side.

au bout de tout, at length;
so à la longue.

aujourd'hui, to day, at this
day.

aux environs, thereabouts.

autour, about, round about.

au regard, in respect.

au demeurant, moreover.

au mieux aller, let the best
come to the best.

au pis aller, let the worst
come to the worst, come
what may.

au pis, at the worst.

au prix, in comparison.

au reste, moreover; so au
surplus.

au préalable, first and for-
most, after the rate.

aussi, also, so, as.

autrement, otherwise.

autrefois, heretofore, in
times past.

auparavant, before, before
time, heretofore.

autant, as much, as well, as
many, so much, so many.

autant de fois, as many
times.

Beaucoup, much, many.

Bien, well, very; else.

Bien peu, very little.

Bien que, although.

Bas, under, low, below.

Bonnement, well.

Bellement, fairely, gently,
softly, leisurely.

Bonne piece, a good while
agoe.

çà, hither, to this place,
come hither, give hither.

çà & là, here and there,
hither and thither, scat-
teringly.

çà-sus, here above.

çà-haut, here on high.

çà-bas, here beneath.

ça-ça, come ho, forward.

Car, for.

Ceans, here within.

Cependant, in the meane
while, in the meane time.

Certes, certainement, truly.

Cher

Chez moy, with me, at my house, at home.

Chez luy, at his house, &c.

Comme, as, like as.

Comme ainsi soit que, albeit; howsoever it be that.

Comment, how.

Combien, how much? how many?

Combien que, although.

Combien de fois? how many times?

Combien y a-il? how many is there? how much is there? how long is it ago? *Contre*, against.

Cy, here, hither.

Cy-apres, hereafter.

Cy-devant, heretofore.

Coup-sur-coup, often, oft-soones.

D'abondant, *d'avantage*, moreover.

D'abordée, *d'abordade*, *d'arrivée*, at first, at first sight, comming or meeting. So soone as come.

D'entrée, *d'intrade*, at first entrance, so soone as come in.

D'adventure, *de fortune*, *de cas fortuit*, by chance, perhaps, peradventure, by fortune.

De prime-face, at first sight, at first.

D'assurance, boldly, with confidence.

D'an en an, from yeare to yeare; *de jour en jour*, from day to day.

De bien en mieux, from good to better, better, & better; *so de mieux en mieux*, better and better.

De mal en pis, from evill to worse, worse and worse.

De pis en pis, worse and worse.

D'ailleurs, from elsewhere, from another place.

Dans, *dedans*, in, within.

De dedans, *du dedans*, from within.

D'autant que, for as much as. *De*, of, from, with.

Du, *des*, of the, from the, &c.

De bonne heure, early, betimes, in good time.

D'avec, from.

De-çà, on this side, hither.

De là, on that side, over, beyond, from thence.

De ceans, of this house.

D'icy, hence.

De par de-çà, on this side.

De par de-là, on that side.

D'icy pres, hard by.

De jour, by day.

De nuit, by night.

D'illec, from thence.

D'enbaat

D'enhaut, from on high,
from above.

D'embas, from beneath, or
from below.

Dehors, out, without,
abroad.

De dehors, from abroad.

Du dehors, from without,
or from abroad.

D'ici à peu, a little hence,
a while hence, it wants
but little time and space
to it.

De loing, from farre, a far
off.

*D'heure à heure, d'heure
en heure*, from heure to
heure.

Le rang en rang, from rank
to ranke.

De point en point, from
point to point.

De fois à autre, oftsoones,
ever and anon, from
time to time.

De guet à péns, willingly,
of set purpose, with pre-
meditation.

Dea, or Dâ, as oüy dâ, yea
truely. *Non dâ*, no
truely.

*De maniere que, de sorte
que*, in such sort as, so
that.

De mesme, in like manner,
in like sort, likewise.

Demain, to morrow.

De demain, by to morrow.

De matin, by morning, in
the morning.

Du matin, of, or from the
morning.

De soir, by, or in the eve-
ning.

Du soir, of, of from the
evening.

Derriere, behinde, on the
backpart, or side.

De derriere, du derriere,
behind; of or from be-
hind.

Devant, before, or the
forefide.

De devant, du devant, be-
fore, on the forefide, of
or from before.

De fait, de propos deliberé,
of set purpose, of an ad-
vised purpose.

De plein gré, with full
liking, with full minde
and good will.

Depuis, since, sithence,
from.

Du depuis, since thence,
since, or from that time.

De peur que, lest, lest
that, for feare that, or
for feare lest.

De rang, de suite, by ranke,
one after another.

D'ordre, by order.

Des, from, since.

Desque, so soone as.

Des-l'heure que, from the
houre, or time that.

Deslors, from that time
forth.

Des-ja, already.

Deformais, from hence-
forth.

De surcroist, de par en sus,
de surplus, du surplus, de
par dessus, of overplus,
over and above, over and
besides, moreover.

De renfort, abundantly.

Derechef, againe.

Dessus, above, upon, over,
on, on high.

Dessous, under, under-
neath, below, beneath.

Devers, towards.

Devant, afore, *avant*,
hence.

Deux fois, twice.

De vray, in truth.

De fait, indeed, through-
ly.

Donc, doncques, then.

Devant hier, two dayes
agoe.

Dont, whereof, whence,
whereby, wherewith,
whereupon.

Doresnavant, dorennavant,
from henceforth, hence-
forward.

D'où, whence, from
whence.

D'outre, en outre, through
and through.

Du commencement, from,
or at the beginning.

Du temps de, in the time
of.

Du temps passé, in times
past.

Du tout, wholly, altoge-
ther, throughly.

Droit en ce lieu, just here,
or in this place.

Du val à mont, upwards,
from the bottome to the
top.

Du mont à val, from the
top to the bottome.

En, and plurall *es*, in, in-
to.

En apres, afterwards.

En outre, moreover.

En fin, in the end.

En haut, on high.

En bas, below.

En amont, upwards.

En tout advenement, what-
soever happen.

En-y-1, agoe.

En-là, from thence.

Enbuy, to day, this day.

Enda, in faith, in truth.

Emmi, amidst, in or through
the midst.

Encore, yet.

Encoreque, although.

Encontre, towards, against,
right against, over a-
gainst.

Endroit, by, neere about,
towards.

En haste, in hast, hastily.

En verité, in truth, true-
ly.

Ensemble, together.

Entre, between, amongst.

Entre-deux, indifferently,
betweene both.

Entantque, in as much as.

Envers, towards.

Environ, about.

Entour, about, round a-
bout.

Expres, of purpose.

Finalemeut, at last, last-
ly.

Fin que untill that.

Fin à tel jour, till such a
day.

Fin de conte, finally.

Fi, fy, fy away, (an inter-
jection.)

Fors, forsque, except, un-
lesse: out.

Fort, very, very much, ex-
ceedingly, strongly.

Gare, ware, beware.

Gare le heurt, ware horns.

Gueres, guere, little, small,
but little, not much, not
long.

Guere souvent, seldome.

Haulte heure, farre day.

Hier, yesterday.

Her soir, yesternight.

Haut, highly, above, a-
loft.

aloud, on high.

Hors, out, without.

Hors d'icy, hence.

Hormis, except, saving
that.

Huy, to day, this day.

Ja, well-neere, lacking lit-
tle: never, already.

Jadis, of old, in times past.

Façoitque, Façoitque, al-
though, albeit.

Famais, never.

Ici, here *Icy*, illec, there,
thither.

Incontinent, forthwith.

Fa n'adveene que, God for-
bid that. *Fa à Dieu ne*
plaise que, God forbid.

Incontinent que, so soone
as.

Foignant, neere to.

Foint que, moreover, be-
sides that, also that.

Journellement, daily.

Jus, down, to the ground.

Fouxte, nigh to, accor-
ding to.

Jusques, untill, till, unto.

Jusqu'à quand? Jusques à
quand, how long? untill

when, or till how long.

Jusqu'à tantque, *Jusques à tantque*, *Jusqu'à ceque*, *Jusques à ceque*, till such time as, untill that.

Là, there, thither.

Là bas, there below, beneath, downewards.

Là haut, on high, above.

Leans, there within.

Le moins du monde, the least that can be.

Le lendemain, the next day.

Le passé, in times past.

Loing, farre, far off.

Lors, then.

Lorsque, when as, then when.

Mais, but.

Matin, morning.

Mais de, more, any more.

Maisque, but what, so that.

Mais-buy, not to day, not so long as this day lasts.

Mesbuy, the same.

Maintenant, now.

Maintes fois, oftentimes.

Mal, ill, naughtily.

Malement, the same.

Midy, noone.

Minuit, midnight.

Mieux, better.

Malisement, hardly, un-

casily, difficultly.

Mesmes, *mesmement*, namely, especially.

Moins, least, less.

Mon, as *C'est mon*, yes indeed, *asseavoir mon si*, whether.

Mout, much, greatly.

Moyennant que, so that.

Moyennement, meanely, moderately, indifferently.

N'agueres, not long since, yer while, of late.

Ne, no, nor, neither.

Nenni, no.

Neantmoins, nevertheless.

Ni, ny, no, neither.

Non, nor, not.

Non pas ? is it not ?

Non obstant, notwithstanding.

Non pourtant, not for all that, notwithstanding.

Nullement, no whit at all, in no case, in no sort.

Nulle part, no where.

Onc, ever, at any time.

Oncques, ever, (and with a negative) never.

Or avant, on forward.

Or, ores, now.

Or bien, well then, now well.

Or ça, or *sus*, goe to, well then.

Or donques, seeing then.

Or si, if then.

Or-primés, à or-primés,
now at length: but even
now, not before now.

Ores, now.

Ores que, though now,
when.

Ou, or, either, or els.

Où, where, whither,
whereas.

Ou bien, or els.

Oultre, *oultre*, over, be-
yond, besides, further,
furthermore.

Outreplus, moreover.

Oüy, cy, yea, yes.

Oüy-da, yes indeed.

Oüy-bien, but indeed, yea
indeed.

Par, by, through.

Parainfi, so, even so, by
this meanes, therefore.

Par ailleurs, by some other
way, by some way els.

Par apres, afterwards.

Par aupres, neer, hard-by.

Paraventure, peradven-
ture.

Par-cy, *par-cl*, this way.

par-là, that way.

Par-de-çà, on this side.

Par-de-là, on that side,
beyond.

Parce que, because that, for
as much as.

Par dedans, within, on
the in-side, inwardly.

Par dehors, without, out-
wardly, on the outside.

Par devant, before, on the
fore-part, in presence.

Par derriere, behinde,
backward.

Par dessus, upon, upward,
above, aloft, over and
above.

Par dessous, under, under-
neath.

Par dévers, towards.

Paravant, before, hereto-
fore, in times past.

Pareillement, likewise.

Par-fois, now and then.

Partant, therefore, on this
condition.

Par tel si que, on condition
that, so that.

Parmy, amidst, amongst.

Par ci-devant, heretofore,
in former times.

Par le passé, in times past.

Par où, which way.

Par temps, in good time.

Par tout, every where,
throughout.

Par trop, too much.

Parquoy, why? therefore,
for this cause, for which
cause. *Pas*, not.

Pas à pas, step by step.

Peste-me ste, confusedly.

Pendant ceci, in the meane time.

pendant que, whilest that.

petit à petit, leisurely, by little and little, faire and softly.

peu à peu, by little and little.

peu, little, few, a small deale.

peu s'en faut, little wanteth it, well neere.

peu souvent, seldome.

peu de chose, a small matter.

peu apres, a while after.

peu-plus, peu-moins, little more or lesse.

peut-estre, it may be, perhaps.

pis, worse, worst.

piece, long agoe, a great while since.

pirement, as *pis*.

plus, more.

plusieurs fois, many times.

plustost, sooner, rather.

plus pres, neerer.

plus loing, farther off.

plus outre, further.

plus haut, higher.

plus bas, lower.

point, not.

pour, for, in stead.

pour le plus, at the most.

pour le moins, at the least.

pour le mieux, for the best.

pourquoy? why? wherefore?

pource, because, therefore.

pourveu que, so that, on condition that.

pourtant, notwithstanding, for all that.

pourtant que, because that, for as much as.

pour autant que, for as much as.

possible, perhaps.

pose le cas que, put case that.

premierement, preablement, first, first and formost.

pres, neere, nigh, well-nigh.

presque, almost, well-nigh.

promptement, prestement, and *prest*, readily, quickly.

prou, enough, much, greatly.

puis, then, moreover.

puis apres, afterwards, next after.

puisque, seeing that.

Quand, when, though.

Quand à, or *quant à*, as for,

for, as touching.

Quant et, together with.

Quant & quant, forthwith, by and by.

Quasi, almost, as it were.

Quantes fois, how often, how many times.

Que, that, as, than, but, saving.

Que bien, *que mal*, indifferently, well or ill, one way or other.

Quelque fois, sometimes.

Quelque part, some where.

Quelque part que, where-soever, whither soever.

Quelque peu, some little, some few, a very little.

Qu'ainsi soit, that so it is.

Quoy? what? why? how?

Quoy que, although, how-soever.

Rarement, seldom.

Rien, any thing, or (with a negative) nothing.

Rière, backward, behind.

Sans, without.

Sauf, saving.

Selon, according to, even as.

Semblablement, likewise.

Sens dessus dessous, topside-turvie, upside-down.

So sens dessous dessus.

Sens devant derriere, the wrong way, preposterously, the cart before the horse.

Seulement, onely.

Si, if, if so be that, whether, so, yes.

Si que, so as, so that.

Si tost, so soone.

Si tost que, so soone as.

Sinon, unlesse, but.

Sinon que, but that, saving that.

Si est-ce que, yet so it is that.

Si ce n'est, unlesse it be.

Soir, evening.

Sur le soir, toward evening.

Sur le tard, somewhat late.

Sur, on, upon, over, above.

Sous, or *soz*, under, underneath, beneath.

Soit, be it.

Souvent, often.

Souvente-fois, oftentimes.

Soudain, suddenly.

Soudain que, so soone as.

Sur le champ, presently.

Surce, hereupon.

Sus, on, up, upon, over,
above.

Sus debout, up an end.

Sus avant, on before.

Tard, late, lately.

Tardement, slowly, lin-
gringly.

Tandis, whilst.

Tant, so as, so much, so
great, so many, so long,
so well, as well.

Tant seulement, onely.

Tant soit peu, never so lit-
tle, how little soever.

Tant pour tant, ratably.

Tant que, so much as, so
many as, so long as.

Tantost, anon, by and by,
forthwith.

Tellement, so, in such
sort.

Tellement quellement, so
so, indifferently.

Tout ainsi, even as, like as.

Tout autant, even as well,
even as much, just-as
much, or as many.

Tout beau, soft and faire,
not too fast: so *Tout*
bellement.

Tout à coup, suddenly.

Tout à fait, throughly,
wholly.

Tout à un coup, all at once,
or one time.

Tost, soone.

Tout à l'heure, at the very
instant.

Tout incontinent, present-
ly.

Tout outre, through and
through, wholly.

Tout à point, fitly.

Tout à la fois, all at once.

Totalement, wholly

Toutes fois, notwithstan-
standing, yet, albeit.

Toutes-fois & quantes, as
often; so *Toutes &*
quantés fois.

Tousiours, alwayes.

Tous les jours, every day.

Tour à tour, turne by turne

Tout d'un train, all at one
clap or time.

Tres à bon escient, in very
good earnest, most ear-
nestly.

Tres-arriere, exceeding
backward.

Tresbien, very well.

Tresmal, very ill.

Trespou, very little, very
few.

Tresprés, very neer.

Tresloin, very farre.

Treshaut, most high.

Tresbas, most low.

Tresoutre, farre beyond.

Trop, too much, over-
much, greatly, much.

Trop peu, too little.

Vers,

Vers, towards.

Veu, seeing considering.

Veu que, seeing, that.

Viſ à viſ, right againſt.

Viſtement, and (in ſteed thereof) *viſte*, quickly, ſpeedily.

Uniment, with one accord.

Voire, yea, yea but, ſurely.

Voirement, certainly, forſooth, indeed.

Volontiers, willingly.

Voicy, ſee heere, looke heer, behold.

Voila, ſee there, look there, behold.

Vrayement, truly.

CHAP. VIII.

Of the Syntax or Conſtruction of the parts.

First, of the Articles.

THEſe three, *le*, *la*, and *les*, being ſet afore verbes, and following them in conſtruction, are not Articles, but Pronounes; and being ſet afore nouns, are Articles. Examples of both: *L'eſprit ſ'engourdit, auſſi bien que le corps, ſi on ne le fiçonne d'exercice de bonnes lettres;* & *les vices ſ'y rampent aiſément, qui ne les ſarclent & arache par meditation & action de vertu:* The mind waxeth lumpiſh, as well as the body, if we doe not faſhion it by the exerciſe of good literature, and vices do eaſily creep into it, if we doe not weed and pluck them up by meditation, and action of vertue. *La vertu eſt la vraye ſource de nobleſſe; ſuivons-la,* vertue is the true originall of nobility; let us follow it.

Secondly, they are ſet afore Pronounes Poſſeſſives; as, *Le mien*, mine, *le voſtre*, yours. Thirdly, afore Participles having the force of Nounes, as *L'ignorant*, the ignorant: *le mal-faicteur*, the evill doer. Fourthly, afore Verbs of the infinitive Mood, put for Nounes; as, *Le boire*, & *le manger*, *le ſauter*, & *le voltiger*, ſont
noſtre

nostre vie alonger : good cheer and merriment lengthen out our life. Fifthly, with some Prepositions set alone without Nounes, as, *Cet homme a belle apparence par le dehors*, *je ne sçay comme il est par le dedans*, this man makes a faire shew outwardly, I know not how he is within. *L'ennemy a gaigné le dessus* : the enemy hath gotten the upper hand.

For *de*, note; that where Adjectives are wanting, it seemeth to supply their place, as, *Autorité de Roy*, a Kings authority, for *autorité Royale*. *Ouvrage d'homme* or *humain*. Thus *de* is englished Of, as, *poisson de riviere*, river-fish, or fish of the river, *verdure d'herbe*, greenness of grasse, *vistesse de pieds*, swiftnes of feet: And so, generally, is used in those phrases which the Latines put in the Genitive or Ablative cases, as, *Homme de grande doctrine*, a man of great learning, *jeune homme de grande esperance*, a young man of great hope, *joyau de prix*, a jewell of price, *cheval de cent escus*, a horse of an hundred crowns, *homme de bien*, an honest man, *d'honneur* of credit, *de sçavoir* of knowledge, *d'esprit* of wit, &c.

Secondly, *de* is also used when we expresse the efficient cause, as, *bruster d'amour*, to burne with love, *souffrir de tristesse*, to sigh with sorrow, *pallir de peur*, to be pale with feare, *rougir de honte*, to be red, or blush with shame. Thirdly, *de* is used when the matter is expressed whereof a thing is made, as, *Pourpoint de satin*, a sattin doublet, *Maison de pierre*, a stone-house, *Armures d'acier*, Steele armour: *Bas de soye*, silke stockings. Fourthly, *de* is used with Adverbs: as afore some of place, *Le maistre de ceans*, the maister of this house: *Le gouverneur d'icy*, the governour of this place: *Il vient de chez nous*, he comes from our house. After these of quantity, *Combien, tant, autant, plus, beaucoup, assez, peu, prou, d'avantage, moins*, as, *Beaucoup d'argent*, much money, *peu d'esprit*, little wit, *assez de vin*, wine enough,

enough, &c. Of denying, as, *à la faim n'y a point de mauvais pain*, course bread is welcome to the hungry. Of disdain, as, *Fy de plaisirs, d'estat & d'or, qui de vertun'a le thresor*, fie on the pleasures, honour and wealth, that hath not the treasure of vertue. Fifthly, *de* is also applied to all Nounes and Verbs importing a scantling or certain quantity of matter, as, *Potée de vin*, a pot full of winne, *chartée de foin*, a cart-load of hay, *panerée de fruits*, a basket full of fruit, *chambrée de filles*, a chamber full of maidens: also *remplir de vin*, to fill with wine, *garnir de pierreries*, to garnish with precious stones, *pourvoir de necessaires*, to provide with necessaries. So their contraries, *Desgarnir, desemplir, manquer*, &c. And heer let the English take heed, that in stead of *de*, they use not *avec* with, but say, *Garny d'argent*, not *avec de l'argent*, furnished with money, *orné de vertus*, not *avec de vertus*, adorned with vertues, *parée de tapisserie*, hung with tapestrie, &c. Sixtly, *de* is used in a frequent phrase importing disdain, and beginning with *ce, un*, or the like, as, *Ce glouton de Thomas*, that gluttonous fellow Thomas, *un vaurien de laquis*, an ungracious lackey, *mon vieillard de mary*, the old man my husband; and sometime in good part, as, *Mon bon homme de pere*, the good man my father, *ma bonne femme de mere*, the good woman my mother. Lastly, *de* before proper names is sometimes omitted by Eclipsis, as, *La place Maubert*, the place of Maubert, *la rue Saint Denys*, Saint Denise-street, *l'Eglise, le pont, l'enseigne nostre Dame*, for *de nostre Dame*, the Church, the bridge, the signe of our Lady, *la porte Saint Marceau*, the gate of S. Marceau, *l'Apocalypse S. Jean*, the Revelation of S. John: And also in this proverbiall speech, *C'est le ventre ma mere*, for *de ma mere*, *je n'y retourne plus*, I will come no more there.

An exception from the fourth rule abovesaid, is when one of the said Adverbs of quantity is set after
the

the Substantive signifying the matter: for then (in stead of the indefinite *de*) are the definite Articles used; as *Vous aurez de l'argent assez*, you shall have money enough, in stead of *assez d'argent*: *il y a du courage trop*, for *trop de courage*, he hath courage too much; *de la faveur beaucoup*, or *beaucoup de faveur*, much favour: *J'ay du credit autant que vous*, or *autant de credit que vous*, I have as much credit as you. Also *pres* and *aupres* use the definite Articles; as, *Aupres du feu*, neere the fire, or by the fire side; *pres de l'Eglise*, loin de Dieu; the neerer the Church, the farther from God. Also *bien* standing for *beaucoup*; as, *Il a bien du pouvoir*, du *savoir*, de l'*entendement*, de la *vertu*, he hath much power, knowledge, understanding, vertue. *Vous prenez bien de la peine pour moy*, you take much paines for me: *Les guerres civiles ont bien apporté des calamitez en France*, the civill wars have brought many calamities into France. Also after words of quantity, when there is some restrictive tearme restraining the Substantive, then may either the definite or indefinite Articles be used indifferently; as *Combien avez vous acheté des livres*, or *de livres de ce Libraire*? how many books have you bought of this bookseller? *Voicy un bouquet des fleurs*, or *de fleurs de mon jardin*, here is a posie of flowers of my garden. The word *Force*, signifying quantity, hath no article afore nor after; as, *Force biens*, much goods, *force escus*, many crownes, or store of crowns; *force ennuis*, many sorrows: but when it signifieth strength or force, it hath afore it the Article *à*, and *de* after it; as, *à force d'argent*, by force of mony; *à force d'hommes*, by strength of men.

Saint and *Maistre*, joyned to some proper name, are construed with indefinite Articles; as, *Les œuvres de Saint Augustin*, Saint Austen's workes; *J'ay parlé à Monsieur Jean*, I have spoken to or with Master John.

Monsieur, *Ma lame*, and *Ma la moifelle*, in phrases denoting

noting a foolish and presumptuous imitation, doe admit the definite articles ; as , *Vous faites du Monsieur* , you play the Gentleman : *Voilà une gueuse qui trenche de la Damoiselle* , there is a begger cuts it out like a Gentlewoman : *Voicy un sot , qui taille du brave* , heere is a foole, that would make himselfe a brave fellow. So we say , *Faire la Damoiselle* , to play the Gentlewoman ; *Faire le suffisant* , or *du suffisant* , to make himselfe a sufficient man ; *Tailler , trancher , or coucher du Gentilhomme* , to play the Gentleman.

A , *au* , *à l'* , *à la* , *aux* and *és* , are prepositions , and doe lend us the dative case. The article *à* , being of the common gender , and of both numbers , is of value wholly indefinite , as , *Il appartient à Roy de gouverner* , &c. it belongs to a King to governe, that is, to any King wharsoever : and we may also say ; *Il appartient à un Roy* , &c. *A chiens* , or *à des chiens bargneux aureilles déchirées* , mangie dogs have torn ears.

First , by this Article *à* , we shew the use to which a thing is dedicated , or the finall cause ; as , *Un toict à brebis* , a sheep-coat ; *un estuy à peignes* , a combe case ; *terre à froment* , a wheat-field , or ground for wheat. Secondly , an imputation ; as , *Imputer à negligence* , to impute to negligence ; *tourner à blafme* , *à reproche* , to turn to blame , to reproach. Thirdly , we thereby shew the end or islue ; as , *Reüssir à heureux effect* , to come to happy effect ; *succeder à gloire* , to succed gloriously ; *tomber à honte* , to fall out shamefully ; *tourner à perte* , *à dammage* , *à profit* , to turn to losse , to harme , to profit. Fourthly , by *à* , we shew the manner how a thing is done ; as , *Marcher à pas conter* , to goe telling ones steps ; *chercher à tastons* , to seeke groping ; *aller à reculons* , to goe backwards ; *aller à cheval* , to go on horseback ; *à pied* , on foot. Fifthly , the fashion , or some notable adjunct to the fashion of a thing , where *à* seems to signifie With ; as , *Du taffetas à gros grain* , grograine

or

or raffeta with a great graine or wale; *du passément à dentelles*, a lace with needle-work peaks or edging; *une Monstre à resveille matin*, a Watch with a larum. 6. Sometime it seems to signifie For; as, *Un tel est tenu à homme de bien*, such a one is held for an honest man; *à sçavant personnage*, for a man of knowledge; *à preud'homme*, for a good man. *Si je ne vous suis à Sénateur, vous ne me sçerez pas à Consul*: if I be not to you a Senatour, you shall not be to me a Consull. Lastly, it is imployed in many Adverbiall phrases; as, *à tant*, by this, or thereupon; *à tard*, late; *à tort*, wrongfully, *à droit*, by right; *à tors & à travers*, overthwartly; *à peine*, scarcely; *à souhait*, wishedly; *à point, à propos*, fitly, or in due time; *à escient*, in earnest This Adjective *Tout* hath afore it the indefinite Articles, when it cometh afore a Substantive with *le* between; as, *Tout le monde*, all the world, every body; *de tout le monde, à tout le monde*. So *Maint maints, mainte maintes, and plusieurs*, require onely the indefinite articles.

Au, à l', à la, aux and *és*, are definite Articles; as, *Se presenter au Roy*, to present himselfe to the King; *aller aux champs*, to goe into the countrey; *à l'escole*, to schoole; *S'exercer aux arts liberaux*, or *és arts*, to exercise himselfe in the liberall sciences; *aux estudes*, or *és estudes*, in studie; *se promener aux, or és jardins*, to walke in the gardens. These two *aux* and *és*, when they signifie In the, or within the, are indifferently used, onely herein they differ, *és* signifies so only and nothing else: but *aux* (being applied to a thing) signifies also to the, or with the, or at the. Examples of both, *Vertue-side és cœurs nobles*, vertue is resident in noble hearts: *Dieu à parlé aux prophetes, & és prophetes*, God hath spoken to the Prophets, and in the Prophets.

These definite articles are used, first, to shew the instrument wherewith a thing is made or done; as *Duit au marteau*, wrought with the hammer, *à la lime*, with

with the file ; *compasé au compas* , compassed with the compass ; *esquarry à l'esquierre* , squared out with the squire ; *dressé au niveau* , levelled with the levell , &c. 2. Also when we give a note to a thing, whereby it may be known : as *La Lune au teint d'argent* , the silver-coloured Moon ; *François au grand nez* , Francis with the great nose ; *La belle fille aux jaunes cheveux* , the faire maiden with the yellow haire. 3. When in phrases wherein *Mode*, maner, or fashon is understood , *à la*, is used: as *à la Françoisé*, after the French fashon; for *à la mode Françoisé* ; *à la matelote*, after the Mariners fashon, or guise, or like a Mariner. 4. To shew the possession of a thing to the owner : as *Les gands de la*, or *à la Dame de ceans* , the Lady of the house her gloves ; *Le cheval au sieur de tel lieu* , the horse of the Gentleman of such a place. But when the proper name of the possessor is expressed, we use *de* or *à*, as *Le logis de* or *à Jacques*, James his house, *le laquais de* or *à Monsieur* , the lackey of Maister, &c. 5. These Dative Articles, *à*, *au*, *à la*, *à l'*, are employed after the verb *faire*; and verbs of senses, as *sentir*, *voir*; of permission, as *Laisser* , *permettre*, *endurer*, *souffrir*, and some infinitives of other verbs, when they are put for *par* by , as , *Je vous feray payer à mon maistre* , I will cause you to be payd by my maister. *Je vous feray tancer à Madame*, I will make my Lady chide you. *Pay veu bastir aux maçons ce logis* , I saw this house builded by the masons. *Je vous ay oüy appeller à vostre maistre* , I heard you called by your maister. *Je feray nettoyer vos bottes au valet de ceans* , I will cause your bootes to be made clean by the servant of the house.

The Definite articles are used afore *Sire*, speaking of the King; as *le Roy nostre Sire* , the King our Lord, *du Roy nostre Sire*, *au Roy nostre Sire*: or speaking of some notable Merchant ; as, *Le sire Joffe envoie de Marchandise au sire Martin* , qu'il avoit acheté du sire Leonard, Master

Master Joffe sendeth wares to master Martin, which he had bought of master Leonard.

2. Of Nouns.

THe Adjectives, which are set after their Substantives are, 1. of Colour; as, *Paroy blanchie*, a whited Wall; *prez verds*, greene Medowes, *Robe purpuriné*, a purple robe; so *pain blanc*, white bread, *pain bis*, browne bread; *vin claret*, claret wine; *vin blanc*, white wine. 2. Of Elementarie qualities, such as *Chaud*, hott, *froid*, cold, *sec*, drie, *humide*, moist, *moite*, wet, *aride*, drie, *tiede*, luke-warme; as, *terre seiche*, a drie ground, *temps pluvieux*, raynie weather, *viande froide*, cold meat. 3. Participles passive; as, *Chemin battu*, a beaten way, *un livre clos*, a booke shut, *huis ouvert*, a dore open, *chambre garnie & tapisée*, a chamber furnished and hung. 4. Adjectives belonging to a Citie or Nation, as *La langue Françoisse*, the French tongue, *la mode Italienne*, the Italian fashion. 5. Two Adjectives to one Substantive are both set after: as *La femme vertueuse & sage*, the wise and vertuous woman. 6. Some others there be, of which no certaine rule can be given, but must be learned by use: as, *Le bien & repos public*, the publike weale and rest; *un arbre fruitier*, a fruit-tree; *une terre labourable*, an arable land; *une forest fueillue*, a leafie forrest. Contrariwise, Adjectives of qualitie, quantitie, praise or dispraise, are set before their substantives: as, *Grosse teste & prim col*, *est le commencement d'un fol*, a great head and slender neck, are the tokens of a foole. *Le vray amy est cognu au besoing*, the true friend is knowne in need: *vertueuse Dame*, a vertuous Lady, *bon cheval*, a good horse, *bonne espee*, a good sword, *beau manteau*, a faire cloake, *belle maison*, a faire house, *un sçavant homme*, a skilfull man, *vaillant Capitaine*,

Capitaine, a valiant Captaine, *un mauvais ouvrier*, a naughtie workeman, *forte opinion*, a foolish opinion. Secondly, all the cardinall numbers are set before, as *cent escus*, an hundred crownes, *agé de vingt ans*, twenty yeares old. Thirdly, these words, *Plusieurs*, *maint*, *tout*, *quelque*, *chascun*: as *Toute puissance*, all power, *plusieurs choses*, many things, &c.

Sometimes, the substantive is not exprest, and the Adjective retaineth the gender of the substantive understood, as *Il vit à la Françoisse*, he liveth after the French fashion, where *mode* is understood: *Donnez réponse à la présente*, give an answer to this Letter, where *Lettre* is understood.

Comparatives, when the comparison is made betweene many, have these articles, or prepositions after them, *De*, *du*, *de la*, *d'entre*, *és*, *de l'*, *des*: as *le plus vaillant de tous*, the most valiant of all, *le plus modeste de la compagnie*, the most modest of the companie: *Ciceron le plus eloquent des Romains*, Cicero the most eloquent of the Romanes; *Le plus docte d'entre les Philosophes*, the most learned among the Philosophers. By which examples you see, the French in comparing, use the comparative, where the Latines and English, the superlative. Yet note that sometimes, when the comparative requireth a verbe after it, there is added also some relative, as *qui*, *que*, *lequel*, *dont*, &c. as *il est le plus vaillant homme que je connoisse*, he is the valiantest man I know. *Voilà la plus grande merveille dont j'ay jamais oüy parler*, there is the greatest wonder that ever I heard speake of, &c. Marke also these phraes, *C'est celui qui me plaist le plus*, it is he that pleaseth me most; *L'homme auquel je me fie le plus*, the man in whom I put most confidence, or *de qui je me desie le plus*, whom I distrust most.

But when the comparison is made betweene two, then the conjunction *que*, and sometimes *de*, (Englished,

shed, than) is used; as, *Cicéron estoit plus eloquent qu'Hortensius*, Cicero was more eloquent than Hortensius, *Plus coüard qu'un Lièvre*, more cowardly than a Hare, *La face n'est plus grande de demy pied*, the face is no greater than halfe a foot. *Je voudrois apprendre d'un plus sage que moy*, I would learne of one more wise than my selfe.

And here note well, that if the speech require a verb after the conjunction *Que*, Than, you must set *Ne* betweene the said *que* and the verbe, as, *Un iel est plus sçavant qu'il ne paroist de prime face*, such a one is more skilfull than he makes shew to be at first sight. *Vous avez mieux appris icy que vous n'eussiez fait ailleurs*, you have learned better here, than you had done in another place. *Il parle autrement enhuy qu'il ne faisoit hier*, he speaks otherwise to day, than he did yesterday. *Je l'ay trouvé autre que je ne l'avois estimé*, I have found him another manner of man than I thought to have done. In which two last examples, you see *autre* and *autrement*, used in the same manner with *que* and *ne*, as the former.

The French superlative is onely used adjectively, as *Achilles a esté tres-vaillant*, Achilles hath beene most valiant, *Cicéron tres-eloquent*, Cicero most eloquent.

3. Of Pronounes.

THe nominative cases of pronounes are sometimes set immediately after the verbe; as, *Feray-je mal afin que bien en vienne*? shall I do evill, that good may come thereof? *Crois-tu aux Prophetes*? beleevest thou the Prophets? *Viendrez-vous avec nous*? will you come with us? 2. In phrases (as it were) corrective, or having *Ce* afore it; *Di-je*, say I, *veux-je*, will I, *et pense-je*, as I thinke, *ce croy-je*, as I beleeve, *ce dit-on*, as they say; which make a short parenthesis, as *C'est vous, ce disent-ils, qu'ils cherchent*, it is you (as they say) whom they seeke. *Le Turc, ce dit-on, met sus une puiffante*

ente armée, the Turke (they say) levieth a mighty army.

3. In adversatives, elegantly expressed by *Si* for *toutes-fois*, as *vous me blamez, si jay-je mon devoir*, you blame me, yet I doe my dutie. *Vous faites du Seigneur, si sçait-on bien qui vous estes*, you make you selfe a Lord, yet men know well enough who you are.

4. After *Si* and *aussi* concessives, as *Allez tost où je vous ay dit: Si feray-je*, or *aussi feray-je*, goe quickly where I told you; so I will. *Pour bien apprendre, il faut bien estudier: Si faut-il*, or *Aussi faut-il*, for to learne well, one must study well: so one must. *Je pensois que Monsieur se voulsist pourmener: Si veut-il*, or *Aussi veut-il*, or *Si fait-il*, or *Aussi fait-il*, I thought my Lord would have gone to walke: so hee will, or so he doth. And this is used throughout all the tenses and persons of the verbes, *Avoir, estre, faire, falloir* and *vouloir*.

5. In phrases conceived by the Imperfect tense Optative, secretly including the adversative *Though*; as, *Je ne le crain point fust-il un Roland*, I feare him not, were he a Rowland, or, though he were as valiant as was Rowland. *Je ne le croiray-ja, m'en jurast-il cent fois*, I will not beleeeve him, should he sweare it to me an hundred times: that is, though he should sweare. 6. When some adverb or conjunction, such as *Lors, alors, adonc, tant, à tant, si, aussi, à ce, partant, bien*, and the like, begin the phrase, then may the said nominatives be set afore or after the verb; but best after, as *un tel est fort sçavant, aussi a-il pris grand peine*, such a one is very learned, he hath also taken great paines, or, indeed he hath taken great paines, *à ce me veux-je opposer*, to this I wil oppose my self. *Vous m'avez fait une promesse, or il est temps de l'accomplir*, you made me a promise, it is now time to performe it, or *verray-je si vous m'estes amy*, now shall I see if you be my friend: or *sçaura-on quel homme vous estes*, now shall we know what manner of man you are.

7. The conjunction *et*, conjoyning some appendix to a precedent speech, makes the syllable *on* be set after the verbe; *voilà un honneste homme, & fait on grand cas de luy*, there is an honest man, and much account is made of him. *Le Roy se porte bien, & dit on qu'il viendra bien tost icy*, the King is in good health, and they say he will come hither shortly. 8. In some vehement wishes, such as, *Fusse-je aussi heureux que vous*, O that I were so happie as you; *à la bonne heure soyez vous venu*, In a good houre be you come: so *puisse-je mourir s'il n'est vray: maudit soit-il qui a fait ce tort*. 9. Lastly, in speeches expressing difficulty, with *à peine*, *à grand regret*, *difficilement*, *malaisément*, *à toute force*: as *vous parlez si bas, qu'à peine vous puis-je entendre*, you speak so low, that I can hardly heare you: *un tel est si coustumier de mentir, que bien enuïs le croit-on, voire quand il dit vray*, such a one is so used to lie, that one hath much adoe to beleieve him, yea, when hee speakes truth.

Very seldome are the personall pronounes nominatives omitted, unlesse it be, 1. In answers by concession or negation, to some enunciative speech afore-going, as *vous escrivez: ce fay-mon*, you write: t'is true, I doe; or *non fay*, I doe not: *Si faites*, but you doe. 2. When *et*, or *et si*, coupleth some appendix to some speech afore-going, wherein the person was sufficiently exprest: *vous m'avez bien conseillé, & vous croiray une autre fois*, you have counselled me well, and I will beleieve you another time. *Il vous respecte, & si vous servira bien*, he respects you, and surely hee will serve you well. 3. In the latter clause of a speech, after *que*; as, *Fay receu les lettres que m'avez envoyées*, I have received the letters you sent me. *Vous voyez qu'avons soin de vous*, you see wee have care of you.

These accusatives and datives, *me, te, se, vous, nous, luy*,

luy, leur, and *le, la, les*, are ever set before their verbe; *Je le vous ay dit*, I have told it you, *je leur escriray*, I will write unto them; *respectons les gens de bien*, car *Dieu les aime*, let us respect honest folke, for God loveth them.

And observe here the order: in affirmative speeches, the nominative pronoun begins, then comes one of the foresaid datives or accusatives, and then the verbe, as in the former examples: & nothing else is to be between them and the verb, except *ne*, which goeth betweene the nominative and the said accusative, or dative, as *Je ne vous refuse pas*, I refuse you not. *Si vous ne me vouliez tenir promesse*, *il ne me la falloit pas faire*, if you were not willing to keepe mee promise, you should not have made it to me. Except also the relatives *en* and *y*, which are set ever immediately before the verb.

From this rule is excepted imperative speeches, wherein the said accusatives and datives are set after the verb, as *Ecrivez luy*, write unto him, *baillez moy à boire*, give me some drinke. *Servez-moy à mon gré*, ou *vous en aillez*, serve me to my liking, or get you gone. Yet this exception is not without these foure limitations: 1. That we use not *me* and *te* after imperatives, but in their stead *moy* and *toy*; as *Oste toy de là*, get thee way from thence. 2. That, if there bee a second imperative Verb joyned to the first by some conjunction, then in the second, the said accusative or dative is set before; as *Si vous voyez mes amis, saluez-les, & leur dites que je me porte bien*, If you see my friends, salute them, and tell them that I am well. 3. That *se* is ever set before the Verb, as *qu'il se souvienne de moy*, let him remember mee. 4. That, in prohibitive speeches, or negative imperatives, they are set before; as *Ne luy faites point de mal*, doe him no evill; *Ne le dites à personne*, tell it to no body, *ne la fâchez point*, anger her not.

If both a Dative and an accusative (which is ever one of these, *le, la, les,*) come before the verbe, for their placing, observe these rules: 1. If the Datives be *luy, or leur*, then they are set after the Accusative, as *Qui trouvera les gands à Madame, qu'il les luy rende*, he that shall finde my Ladies Gloves, let him restore them unto her. 2. *Se* Dative is ever set afore, and the Accusative after, as *Ces beaux ornemens-là, Madame se les fait faire*, those same faire ornaments, my Lady caused to be made for her selfe. 3. If the Datives be *me, te, nous*, or *vous*, they may be placed indifferently, before or after; as *Si vous avez affaire de mes livres, je les vous prêteray*, or *je vous les prêteray*, If you have need of my bookes, I will lend you them, or I will lend them to you. *Je ne la vous*, or *je ne vous la donneray pas*, I will not give it you. 4. So also in imperative speeches, the Accusative first followes the verbe, then the Dative; (except it be *Se*, which ever goes afore the verbe.) as *Sa requeste est juste, octroyez-la-luy*, his request is just, grant it him. 5. In speeches where are two verbes, and the second an infinitive, you may place indifferently your Pronounes before one of the two verbs, as *vostre demande est raisonnable, je vous veux l'octroyer*, or *je vous la veux octroyer*. 6. But if the infinitive have before it a preposition, your Pronounes must be placed betweene the preposition and the infinitive; as *Je desire de la vous octroyer*, I desire to grant it you; *J'ay oublié à les vous envoyer*, I forgot to send them to you.

Ce joyned with a substantive, signifieth This, as *Ce livre est doctement composé*, this book is learn:dly compiled, *Cette Harangue est elegamment tissüe*, this Oration is eloquently made. 2. *Ce* is also set afore *qui* and *que*, as *Je ne croy pas ce que vous dites*, I beleeeve not that which you say, *Je feray ce qu'il vous plaira*, I will doe what you please. 3. *Ce* is often used with a verbe

Substan-

Substantive, and then commonly signifieth It ; as *C'est la verité*, it is the truth, *c'est moy*, it is I, *c'est luy*, it is he, *c'est nous*, it is we ; which may also be said ; *ce suis-je*, it is I, *ce sommes-nous*, it is wee, *c'est eux*, or *ce sont eux*, it is they, or them, *c'est bien dit*, it is well said, *ce sera sagement parlé*, it will be wisely spoken, *c'a esté subtilement argué*, it hath beene subtilly disputed, *c'eust esté prudemment advisé*, it had beene wisely advised. And in questions, *qui est-ce ?* who is it ? *est-ce moy ?* is it I ? *est-ce luy ?* is it he ? *fust-ce eux ?* was it they ? *qu'est-ce ?* what is it ? *quand fust-ce ?* when was it ? *Où a-ce esté ?* where was it ? *Sera-ce nous qui payerons ?* shall it be us that shall pay ? or must we pay ? *est-ce vous dont on parle tant ?* is it you they speake of so much ? But sometimes, afore this verb (especially, when it is not put impersonally) *Ce* signifieth This, or these ; as, *Ce fut la cause qui l'induisit*, this was the caused that moved him, *ce sont de claires & évidentes raisons*, these are cleare and evident reasons. Lastly, *Ce* is used vulgarly in answers, afore the enclitick *Mon*, set after the verbs *faire*, *avoir*, *estre*, *falloir*, *vouloir*, as *c'est mon*, it is indeed, *ce fay-mon*, I do indeed, *ce faut-mon*, it must indeed, *ce veux-mon*, I will indeed, &c.

Cecy and *cela* may forme a speech, which *Ce* cannot ; *Si vous m'ôtez cecy, je prendray cela*, if you take away this, I will take that. Here *Ce* cannot be used. 2. They are used with an Adjective put for a Substantive ; as, *Cela est vray*, that is true, *cecyl est clair & évident*, this is cleare and manifest, *cecyl est bon*, this is good, *cela est beau*, that is faire. 3. They are used with a Substantive of the Genitive case, and the same verb ; as *Cela est de bonne grace*, that hath a good grace, *cecyl est de grand travail*, this is of great labour, *cela sera de plaisir*, that will be a pleasure.

Cetuy hath neither feminine, nor plurall, and may be used in absolute answers, as *Qui t'a poussé*, who hath

hath thrust thee ? *Luy*, he, or *Cetuy* he, not *celuy*. *De ces deux freres*, *cetuy me plaist fort*, of these two brethren, this likes me well.

Celuy hath it feminine *celle*, it pluralls *ceulx*, *celles*, and serveth for antecedent to the Relatives *qui*, *que*, *lequel*, *dont*; or afore the Articles *de*, *du*, *des*; as *Celuy que vous voyez*, he which you see, *Ceux qui s'enfuyent*, they which runne away, *Celle qui s'en va*, she which goeth her way; *Celuy qui aime Dieu*, croit en *celuy* qu'il a *envoyé*, he which loveth God, beleeveth in him whom he hath sent. And afore the Articles thus; *Vos accoustremens d'aujourd'huy vous fiesent mieux que ceux d'hier*, your apparell you weare to day, becomes you better than them you had yesterday; *Ce n'est icy mon cheval*, *c'est celui de mon frere*, this is not my horse, it is my brothers; *Ils ont mieux aimé la gloire des hommes que celle de Dieu*, they have loved better the glory of men than of God; *Chacun cherche plus son profit, que celui du public*, every man loveth more his owne profite, than that of the Common-weale.

Mien, *tien*, *sien*, are used in answer of questions, or absolutely; *à qui est ce livre ? Mien*, *tien*, *sien*, whose booke is this ? mine, thine, his, *à qui est cette espée ? miéne*, *tiéne*, *siéne*, whose sword is this ? mine, thine, his. *Un tel loë un cheval, parce qu'il n'en a point du sien*, such a one hireth a horse, because he hath none of his owne. *Vous demandez des bottes à emprunter, si j'en avois des miénes, je vous les presterois*, you aske to borrow boots, if I had of mine owne, I would lend them you. *Si vous n'avez point de cheval, je vous prêteray le mien*, if you have not a horse, I will lend you mine, *à qui est ce livre ? mien*, or *il est mien*, or *c'est le mien*, whose is this booke ? mine, it is mine; which may also be said, *C'est mon livre, il est à moy*; *à qui est cette plume ? miéne*, *elle est miéne*, *c'est la miéne*, and otherwise, *C'est ma plume*, *elle*

elle est à moy. Neverthelesse they may be joyned to substantives, when any of these, *un, une, ce, cette, quelque, nul, nulle, aucun, aucune, tel, telle, chaque, chacun, chacune*, come before them; as, *un mien amy m'a convié à souper*, a friend of mine hath bid me to supper. *Quelques tiens sages voisins, m'ont adverty d'aucuns fols deportemens tiens*, some of thy wise neighbours, have told me of some of thy foolish behaviours.

Nostre, vostre, and *leur*, are used, either conjunctively, as *nostre force est du Tres-haut*, our strength is from the most high. *Leur cœur est faux, & leur langue pleine de mensonges*, their heart is false, and their tongue full of lies: And with *un, ce, quelque, &c.* afore; *un nostre amy*, a friend of ours, *quelque vostre voisine*, some neighbour of yours; *un leur amy*, a friend of theirs: Or absolutely, as, *à qui est ce livre? Nostre, ours, il est nostre*, or *c'est le nostre*, it is ours (which may also be said, *c'est nostre livre, il est à nous.*) *Mon cheval se deult d'un pied, prestez moy le vostre*, my horse is pained of one foot, lend me yours, *à qui est ce livre? leur, theirs, il est leur*, or *c'est le leur*, it is theirs: or otherwile, *c'est à eux. Les hommes font moins de cas de la perte d'autrui que de la leur*, men make lesse reckoning of anothers losse, than of their owne.

And note that if the Substantive, signifying the thing possessed be singular, so must these be; if plurall, so must they; as *vos habits ressemblent les nostres*, your apparell is like to ours; *Il n'est pas vray pere de famille qui n'a soin des siens*, he is not a true father of a familie, that hath not care of his owne. *Les bons Rois aiment leurs sujets*, good Kings love their subjects. *Des miènes, des tiènes, des siènes, des nostres, des vostres, des leurs*, are used sometimes without Substantives, which are understood by an emphaticall eclipsis, viz. *des folies, follies, des fredaines, knavish pranks, des bravades, bravadoes*, or some

some such like ; as, *Quand vous m'aurez bien fait endurer des vostres, je pourrois bien faire des miénes*, when you have made me enough endure your foolish pranks, I may well play mine.

Iceluy, icelle, iceux, icelles, are meere Relatives, having reference onely to some Antecedent, and cannot begin a sentence : *Embrassez les promesses de Dieu, & vous confiez en icelles*, embrace the promises of God, and trust yee in them. *Dieu est mon roc, & je m'appuy-ray sur iceluy*, God is my rocke, and I will rest my selfe upon him.

Qui is either a Relative or interrogative : when it is a relative, it hath often *ce, celuy, ceux*, or *celles* for Antecedents ; as *Celuy qui ayme Dieu, &c.* he which loved God, &c. *Ceux qui sont nos voisins, nous mesprisent*, they which are our neighbours despise us ; or some other Antecedent, as *Nostre Pere qui es és cieux*, our Father which art in heaven ; or beginning a sentence, *Qui est content est riche*, he which is content is rich ; or without an antecedent, and then it signifieth who or whom, as *Je sçay bien qu'ils sont*, I know well who they are. *Considerez de qui on parle, & à qui*, consider of whom they speak, and to whom. So when it is an Interrogative, it is who, or whom, as *Qui estes vous ?* who are you ? *qui cherchez vous ?* whom seeke you ? *de qui tenez vous ces nouvelles ?* of whom have yee these newes ?

Que, beeing a meere Relative, is the Accusative case of *qui*, as *C'est Dieu que j'ayme*, it is God whom I love. *Vous sçavez assez ce que je desire*, you know well enough what I desire, that is, what thing ; and so it signifieth being an Interrogative, as *Qu'est-ce ?* what is it ? *qu'y a-il ?* what is the matter ? *que demandez vous ?* what doe you aske for ?

Que, is also the conjunction, *That*.

Lequel, being a Relative, is the same as *qui*, as *C'est Dieu qui*, or *lequel m'a assisté*, it is God who or which hath

hath assisted me. But when it is an Interrogative, it is as the Latine *uter*; as, *Lequel de ces livres est le vostre?* which of these bookes is yours? *L'quelle de ces deux espèces vous plait le plus?* which, or whether of these two swordes doth like you best?

Quel is ever joyned with some Substantive; as *quelle personne vous pourroit endurer?* what person could endure you? *Je ne sçay quel respect me tient que je ne vous dechasse*, I know not what respect with-holdeth mee, that I chase you not hence.

Quoy sometimes is used absolutely, with a participle, as *Quoy entendu*, which thing understood, or heard; *quoy fait*, which thing being done, *quoy ayant recité*, which having rehearsed: for this we may also say, *ce qu'entendu*, *ce que fait*, *ce qu'ayant recité*. 2. It is used also for an interrogative, *Je vous veux dire quelque chose, quoy?* I will say something to you, what? & *quoy?* & what? *De quoy avez vous besoing?* what have you need of? *à quoy est bon cecy?* what is this good for? 3. It is used at end of a sentence, as *je ne diray pas quoy*, I will not say what: *Il cherche je ne sçay quoy*, he seeketh I know not what. 4. It is sometime used in admiration, as *Quoy! vous voulez vous perdre?* what! will you undoe your selfe? 5. It is sometime referred to some Antecedent, as *voilà l'homme de quoy je vous ay parlé*, there is the man whom I spake to you of, *c'est le fleuve de quoy il est fait mention*, it is the river of which mention is made, *le but à quoy je vise*, the end I aime at. 6. *De quoy* sometimes emphatically betokeneth goods, subject or matter; as, *Cet homme à bien de quoy*, this man hath wherewithall, *Vous me remerciez, mais il n'y a pas de quoy*, you thanke me, but there is no cause why, or there is nothing for what you should doe it.

Quelque is a meere Adjective, requiring a Substantive, *quelque homme*, some man, *quelque femme*, some woman, *quelque bien*, some good.

Quelcun,

Quelcun, or *quelqu'un*, is a Substantive; *Quelcun vous demande*, some body asketh for you, *quelcun de mes amis*, some one of my friends.

Que is applied after *qui*, *quel*, *quelle*, *quelque* and *quoy*; as *Je suis prest d'obeir à vos commandemens, quels qu'ils soient*, I am ready to obey your commandements, whatsoever they be, or *quels soyent-ils*; or *quels qu'il puissent estre*, or *quels puissent-ils estre*, whatsoever they may be. *Il faut se contenter chacun de sa condition quelle qu'elle soit*, or *quelle soit elle*, each man must be content with his condition, whatsoever it be; or *quelle qu'elle puisse estre*, or *quelle puisse-elle estre*, whatsoever it may be: *Il n'est pas licite de murmurer en affliction, quelle-que Dieu l'envoie*, it is not lawfull to murmur in affliction, whatsoever, or howsoever God send it, or *quelle que Dieu la vueille envoyer*, howsoever it please God to send it *Je ne vous crain, qui-que vous soyez*, I feare you not whosoever you be, *qui-que puissiez estre*, or *qui puissiez vous estre*, whosoever you may be. *Je ne vous crain point, quelque grand que vous soyez*, I feare you not how great soever you be; *J'obeiray à vos commandemens quelques difficiles qu'ils soyent*, I will obey your commandements how difficult soever they be; Which phrase may be thus elegantly said, *j'obeiray à vos commandemens pour difficiles qu'ils soyent*: *Je me contente de ma condition quelque petite qu'elle soit*, or *pour petite qu'elle soit*, I am content with my condition, how meane soever it be: *L'homme sage ne se desconforte point pour calamité*, or *quelque calamité qui luy adviène*, a wise man is not discomforted for any calamity that, or, what calamity soever doth happen unto him. So *quoy-que vous me faciez*, what thing soever you doe to mee; *quoy que ce soit*, whatsoever, or howsoever it bee; *quoy qu'il y ait*, whatsoever there be. Sometimes, *quoy-que* is put for *combien-que*, although; as *quoy-que je soye pauvre, toutes-fois j'ayme l'honneur*, though I bee poore,

poore, yet I love my credit.

Aucun is thus used; *Je ne connoy aucun de cette ville*, I know not any of this city, *avez-vous acointance avec cet homme?* have you any acquaintance at all with that man? *Je doute si je trouveray aucun qui me fasse faveur*, I doubt whether I shall finde any to shew me favour; *On en void aucuns qui n'ont que la piasse*, we see some of them, which have nothing but a bragging shew.

Chasque, or *chaque*, is an adjective; *chasque homme*, each man, *chaque femme*, each woman. But *Chascun*, or *chacune* is a substantive; *Chacun ayme son plaisir*, every one loves his pleasure: yet it is sometimes found with a Substantive, *Chacun homme doit avoir sa femme*, & *chacune femme son mary*, each man ought to have his wife, and every wife her husband.

Quiconque thus, *Quiconque veut vivre sainement, vive sobrement*, whosoever will live healthfully, let him live soberly.

Quelconque, thus: *Je ne voy raison quelconque en vostre dire*, I see no reason whatsoever in your saying.

Nul hath *Ne* with it; *Nul ne vid oncques Dieu*, no man ever saw God, *Je n'ay commis nulle faute*, I have committed no fault.

Autrui is applied to persons, being of the common gender and singular number onely: *N'offensez point autrui*, offend not another man; *L'autrui* is applied to their goods; *Plusieurs ne font conscience de ravir l'autrui*, many make no conscience to take away violently another mans goods.

Mesme is an Adjective, as, *La mesme cause*, the same cause: Or else it is joyned together with other Pronounes, as *Moy-mesme*, my selfe, *luy-mesme*, himselfe.

4. Of the particles Relatives, *y*, *en* and *dont*.

It is

Y is either a Relative or an Adverbe of place ; as , *Va au marché : bien j'y vay* , goe to market : well , I goe thither. *Vous plaist-il escrire à Orleans ? Oüy , j'y escri-ray* , will you write to Orleans ? Yes , I will write thither. *Ton maistre est-il au logis ? Oüy , il y est* , or *il n'y est pas* , is thy master at home ? yes , he is there , or he is not there. *Je vay à Londres pour y séjourner quelque temps* , I goe to London to sojourn there a while. *Vous ne me repousserez d'icy , car j'y suis devant vous* , you shall not thrust mee hence , for I was here before you. *J'y passeray* , I will passe by that way. Or it is a Relative of the thing , *Prenez garde à vous ; bien j'y prendray garde* , take heed to your selfe ; well , I will take heed to it , or thereto. *J'y mettré ordre* , I will take order for it , or therein. *Vous sçauvez bien tost la langue Françoisse , si vous y prenez bonne peine* , you will soone learne the French tongue , if you take good paines in it : *Vous y estudiez sans cesse* , you studie therein without ceasing.

En , when it is not a Preposition , but is set afore verbs , is a particle , 1. signifying issue from a place , *viens-tu de la maison ? Oüy , j'en vien* , comest thou from home ? yes , I come from thence. *Quelles nouvelles de la Cour ? on dit que vous en venez* , what newes at Court ? they say you come from thence. 2. Or it is a Relative of the thing , or of some portion or quantity of a thing , as , *On m'a dit , que vous mesdites de moy : sans vostre grace , je n'en mesdy point* , it is told me , that you speake ill of me : no indeed , I speake not ill of you. *Nous jouons à la Prime , en voulez vous estre ?* we play at Primero , will you make one with us ? *Prestrez moy de l'argent , si vous en avez* , lend me some money , if you have any : *je n'en ay point , si j'en avois , je vous en presterois* , I have none , or not any , if I had some , or any , I would lend it you *Combien avez vous d'enfans ? j'en ay assez* , how many children have you ? I have enow , or I have enow of them , *j'en ay un* , I have one. *Y a-il beaucoup d'estrangers en ceste ville ? il y en a peu* , is there many estrangors

estrangers in this city? there are few: meaning, of them. *Estudiez ces preceptes, mettez peine d'en bien user*, study these preceptes, take pains to use them well. *Je n'en doute point*, I doubt not of it. *Je vous en advertiray*, I will advertise you thereof. *Il y en a de si curieux des affaires d'autrui, que les leurs en demeurent*, there be some so curious of other mens affaires, that their owne are neglected thereby. 3. Or it is a Relative of the efficient or materiall cause, *S'estant eschauffé, il en est tombé malade*, having over-heated himselfe, he is fallen sicke with it. *Il aime tant la chasse qu'il en perd le boire & le manger*, he loveth hunting so well, that he loseth his victuals for it, or therby, *j'ay amassé tous mes materiaux pour en bastir une maison*, I have gathered together all my materials, for to build a house withall. *Plusieurs sont tellement curieux des affaires d'autrui, qu'ils en oublient les leurs*, many are so curious of other mens busines, that they forget thereby their own. 4. It is set afore verbs of moving, as *Aller, retourner, venir, fuir, enfuir, courir*, with one of these me, te, se, nous, vous, as *Je m'en vay*, I goe my way. *Il s'en va*, he goeth his way. *Le mal vient à cheval, & s'en retourne à pied*, mischiefe comes on horse-backe, & goes away on foot. And if y and en come both before the verbe, en is set next the verbe, *Je m'y en vay*, I goe my way thither. 5. After imperatives, both y and en are set; *Il est temps d'aller au marché, allez-y, & revenez-en bien tost*, it is time to goe to market, goe thither, and come againe thence, quickly. *Allez vous-y-en*, goe your wayes thither. *Tu as beaucoup d'affaires en charge, songes-y*, or *prends-en soin*, Thou hast many businesles in charge, thinke on them, or take care of them. *Souvenez-vous-en*, remember it, or them. T with il is set afore the verb avoir, used impersonally, as *il y aura du danger*, there will be some danger.

Dont is sometimes used for *duquel*; *Voila l'homme dont est question*, there is the man of whom wee speake, or that wee speake of, or which is in question.

Vous

Vous me parlez de choses dont je n'ay que faire, you speak to me of things with which I have nothing to doe, or which I have nothing to doe withall. Sometimes it is put for *d'où*, as, *Je ne sçay dont cela vient*, I know not whence that commeth.

4. Of Verbes.

Verbes have sometimes their Nominative case set after them, namely, the sentence beginning with an Adverb, conjunction, or other undeclinable part; *Si parla le Roy à eux*, so the King spake unto them. *Lors se leva Monsieur le President*, then arose up my Lord President. *Soudain s'esmeut un grand bruit*, suddenly arose a great noise. *Tost apres vindrent les Ambassadeurs*, soone after came the Emhassadours.

The verb *Sçavoir* in many tenses is used for *pouvoir*, as, *Je ne sçaurois* is very common for *je ne puis*, I cannot.

The verbes *Accuser*, *blasmer*, *taxer*, *souppçonner*, *atteindre*, *convaincre*, and their contraries *Absoudre*, *affranchir*, *delivrer*, *excuser*, *acquiter*, *louër*, *priser*, and *estimer*, governe the person in the Accusative, & the vice or vertue in the Genitive: *Ne blasme point mon maistre d'avarice*, blame not my master of covetousnesse. *Il est louë de sa diligence*, he is praised for his diligence. *Acquittez vous de vostre promesse*, acquit you of your promise.

The Verbes *Acheter*, *vendre*, *loër*, *marchander*, *taxer*, *priser*, *estimer*, *evalüer*, and the like, governe the thing and it price in the Accusative case; *J'ay acheté mon cheval dix escus*, & *l'ay revendu quinze*, I bought my horse for ten crownes, and sold it againe for fifteene. *Cette espée me couste quatre escus*, this sword cost me foure crownes. *Combien*, or *que faites vous cette ceinture*? how sell you this girdle? *Combien* or *que vendez vous*

vous cette paire de gands ? how sell you this paire of gloves ? Yet *Avoir* and *bailler* governe the price with the prepositions *à*, or *pour*, as *J'ay en ce chapeau à deux*, or *pour deux escus*, I have had this hat for two crowns. So *Adjuger*, and *livrer*, and sometime also *evaluer* with *à*; *Cet anneau a esté évalué trente escus*, or *à trente escus*, this ring hath beene valued at thirty crowns. Sometimes are used these Adverbs, *Cher*, *chèrement*, *à bon marché*, *trop*, *peu*, &c. *On vend le vin trop cher à Paris*, they sell wine too deere at Paris. *Il est icy a meilleur marché*, it is here better cheape. *Que vaut le vin en cette ville ?* what is wine worth in this City ? *Dix escus le tonneau*, tenne crownes the tunne, *c'est trop*, it is too much, *c'est bon marché*, it is good cheape.

Verbes of seeming require a Genitive case, or an Accusative; *Il fait du fol*, or *le fol*, he playes the fool. *Faire du malade*, or *le malade*, to faine himselfe sicke.

The Verbe *Estre*, betokening possession, requires a Dative case, *ce livre est à moy*, this booke is mine, *c'est à luy*, it is his, *Ce Palais est au Roy*, this Palace is the Kings.

Reciprocall verbes have before them two Pronounes of one person, the first Nominative, the other Dative or Accusative, as *Je me suis esbady de ce que vous vous estes retiré de moy*, *qui m'estois proposé de me comporter en telle sorte en vostre endroit*, *que vous vous en contenteriez*, & *nous nous entre-aymerions à jamais*, I marvelle at this, that you have withdrawn your self from me, who had purposed in my selfe so to behave my selfe towards you, as you should be wel content withall, & that we should mutually love each other for ever. And these have often a passive sense; *Si je ne me trompe vous vous abusez*, if I be not deceived, you are abused, or deceive your selfe. And this passive sense is exceeding frequent in third persons singular and plurall, by the pronoun

Se, whereby all passive phrases of the third person may be rendred, *L'amy certain se connoist au besoin*, a sure friend is know in need. *Les richesses, au temps present, se prisent plus que la vertu*: riches, in these times, are prized more than vertue. *Les bonnes lettres s'acquièrent à grand travail*, learning is acquired with great labour. These phrases come, when the agent is not expressed. Sometimes this construction changeth the sense and signification of the verbe, as *J'ayme Dieu*, I love God. *Je m'ayme aux champs, je ne m'aime point à la Cour*, I like well, or I delight to be in the countrie, I like not to be in the Court. *Passer*, to passe: *Se passer de quelque chose*, to be contented to want something. *Il se passe à peu de chose*, he can make shift with a small matter, a little serves his turne, he is content with a little. *Garder*, to keepe: *Se garder de quelqu'un*, to take heed of some body.

In asking a question by reciprocall verbs, the Accusative, or Dative is set before, and the Nominative after the verbe; *Te cacheras-tu?* wilt thou hide they selfe? *Vous tiendrez-vous prest à me secourir?* will you hold you ready to succour me? *M'attendray-je à vostre promesse?* shall I wait upon your promise?

Imperatives of reciprocals in the first and second persons have no Nominative expressed, but a Dative or Accusative after them, respecting the person to whom the command is made; *Repentez-vous de vos pechez*: repent you of your sins. *Souvenons-nous de Dieu*, let us remember God. But if another Imperative be annexed to the former by a Copulative, in the latter, the Pronoun is best set before the verbe; *Repentez vous & vous convertissez au Seigneur, ou vous assurez de perir malheureusement*, repent yee, and turne unto the Lord, or be assured, yee shall perish miserably.

The third person Imperative hath no difficulty; *Qu'il se tienne en repos*, let him keepe himselfe in rest.

Qu'ils

Qu'ils se gardent de faillir, let them take heed of failing.

Impersonalls which have *On*, or *lon* for their signe, doe wholly keepe the syntax and use of the verbes they come of: Example of a verb transitive, *On prise assez la vertu, mais on la laisse morfondre*, vertu is praised enough, but men let it languish: Of a reciprocall, *On se passe bien des richesses pourveu que l'on se contente de mediocrité*, we may well be without riches, if we content our selves with mediocritie: Of a passive, *On n'est pas de tous haï, ny de tous aymé*, one is neither hated of all, nor beloved of all.

Impersonalls with *il* for signe, are construed for the most part with a Dative of the person, and a Genitive or Ablative of the thing; *Il ennuye à Monsieur de vostre importunité*, Monsieur is grieved with your importunity. *Il ne luy chaud de vostre dommage*, he cares not for your damage. *Il vous coustera cher de vostre imprudence*, your want of wit will cost you deare. 2. With *De* before an infinitive; *Il me desplaist de vous importuner*, it displeaseth me to importune you. 3. With *Que* and a verbe indicative or substantive; *Vous fâchera-il que je me serve de vos livres?* will you bee angry that I use your bookes? These three wayes are these construed; *Il ennuye, il couste, il fâche, il desplaist, il tarde, il soucie, il grieve, il importe, il poise, il demange, il cuit, il souvient, il souffrit, il chaud; Que vous chaud-il?* what care you? *Il eschet, il arrive, il vient bien, or mal.* These following of the first & third sort, *il couste, il pert, il appert, il apparoit, Il y-va*, as *il y-va de la vie*, ones life is in danger, or, it is as much as ones life is worth. *Il y-va de vostre bonheur*, or *il vous y-va de l'honneur*, your honour, or credite, is like to be lost. *Qu'y va-il?* what hurt, danger or losse is there in it? *Il me profite d'estudier*, or *que j'estudie*, it is profitable for me to study. So *Il duit, il nult, il vient à point, or à propos, il sert, il appartient, il plaist. Il faut, il convient, il vaut*, as *il vous vaut mieux estre pauvre* que

que larron, or il vaut mieux que soyez, &c. it is better for you to be poore than a thiefe; Il s'ensuit, il reste, il vous reste de faire, or il reste que vous fassiez vostre devoir, it remaineth for you to doe your dutie: Il semble, il tient à; as, Il tient à vous que n'estes sçavant, it is long of your selfe, or the fault, let, or hinderance is in your selfe, that you are not learned: Il ne tiendra pas à moy que ne gagniez, there shall be no let for me, or hinderance in me, but that you may gaine: And Il ne me tient pas d'estre marié, I have no desire to marry, Il ne leur tiendra plus d'aller à la guerre, they will have no more will to goe to warre. Some of these, and others have a nominative after them, which if it be set before it, would be personall, Il reste des points d'importance, there resteth some points of importance, Des points d'importance restent, some points of importance doe rest: So Il vient, il regne, il survient, il provient, il couste, il part, il sourt, il naist, il meurt, il manque, il appert, il apparoit, il appartient, il sort, il court, il chet, il eschet, il tombe, il croist, il est, il arrive, il pleut, il gresse, il se commet, il se fait, il se dit, il s'escrit, il s'apporte, &c. Il pleut, il gresse, il tonne, il esclaire, are also absolute. Il fait, as Il fait bon, it is good, il fait mauvais, it is evill, il fait beau se pourmener, it is faire to walke, or walking; Il fait dangereux de naviger, it is dangerous to saile, or sailing, il fait froid, it is cold, il fait chaud, it is hot, il fait sec, it is drie, il fait humide, it is moist, il fait vent, it is windy, il fait jour, it is day, il fait nuit, it is night, &c. The Impersonall Il y a is used in three instances of quantity: 1. When the quantity of a thing is understood, as Combien y a-il de perils en la vie humaine? how many perils are there in mans life? y a-il beaucoup d'argent en vostre bourse? is there much money in your purse? Y a-il de la constance en vous? is there any constancie in you? 2. When a quantity of time, as Combien y a-il que vous estes en France? how long

long have you bene in France? *Il y a trois mois que j'estudie en la langue Françoisse*: I have studied three moneths in the French tongue. 3. Space, or distance of place, as *y a-il loin d'icy à Paris?* is it farre from hence to Paris? *Il y a cinquante lieues*, it is fifty leagues. And when these matters of quantitie are not expressed, it is needfull to supply them by the relative *En*, as *Il y en a qui sont envieux de l'heur, d'autrui*, there are some which are envious of other mens happinellie. *Il est*; as *il est tard*, it is late, *quelle heure est-il?* what is it a clocke? And sometimes for *il y a*, and that is onely in quantity materiall, limited by *peu*, *beaucoup*, *assez*, *gueres*, *plus*, *moins*, *tant*, *autant*, and the like, as *Il est*, or *il y a bien du vin cette année*, there is store of wine this yeare. *Il est*, or *il y a trop de fainéans par le monde*, there are too many idle persons in the world. It is used also in another sense; as *Il me fut hier force de patienter*, I was forced yesterday to have patience.

5. The difference and use of the tenses definite and indefinite indicative.

The imperfect tense setteth before the minde an action (though long agoe) whiles the same was in doing, and not yet finished; And so is used, 1. When there was some interruption or change of the action, whilest it was doing, so that it was not finished; *Cesar dressoit bien la Rep. Romaine, & alloit bien mettre les affaires en bon ordre, s'il n'eust esté assassiné*, Cesar reformed well the Romane Common-wealth, and proceeded well to set the affaires in a good order, if he had not bene murdered. 2. When wee conjoyne two actions happening both at once and continuing alike, (as before;) *Tandis que vous dormiez, j'estudiois*, whilest you slept, I studied: But if the one be of a short, the other of a long continuance, the short is the perfect, and

the long the imperfect ; *Lors que, j'arrivay à Paris, le Roy y estoit.* 3. By reason of this continuative sense, it serves to declare a customarie assiduitie of Action, ordinary and reiterate ; *Estant à Paris, j'allois tous les jours me pourmener en la Sale du Palais,* when I was at Paris, I went every day to walke in the Hall of the Palace. *Un temps fut que vous faisiez estat de moy,* the time was that you made account of me.

The perfect tense respects onely the act finished, and not the continuance thereof, whilest it is adoining ; and of this the French hath two, definite and indefinite. The definite inferreth a time long agoe past, and an act fully finished, limiting the certaine, fixt, and definite time wherein te thing was done ; as *L'an mille cinq cens quatre vingts & dix, le Roy obtint victoire de ses ennemis, gagna la bataille d'Yvry, & peu de temps apres la ville de Paris, se mit en son obeïssance,* in the yeare 1590. the King obtained victory over his enemies, wanne the battaile of Yvry, and a short time after the Citie of Paris was brought under his obedience. *Nous prîmes il y a deux mois six vaisseaux sur nostre ennemy,* two moneths agoe wee tooke sixe ships from the enemy. The indefinite sheweth also an action finished, but either the time not so ended and past over, but that there rests some part of the same yet to passe, or if it be wholly past, yet there is no certaine fixt, and set time limited, when the said action was done ; Examples of both, 1. *De nostre siecle sont advenuës choses memorables,* memorable things have happened in our age. *Cette année les vignes n'ont gueres rapporté,* this yeare the vines have brought forth but little. *Ces deux derniers mois, j'ay estudié en la langue Françoisse,* I have studied these two last moneths in the French tongue, *à matin j'ay esté à l'Esglise,* I was this morning at Church, *à dix heures j'ay dîné,* I dined at tenne a clocke. And with some Adverbe of the time present, or not long past, *Il est*

est venu à ceste heure, he came now, Je me suis aujourd'huy trouvé malade, I felt my selfe sicke to day. 2. Le Roy a obtenu victoire de ses ennemis, puis leur a pardonné, the King hath obtained victory of his enemies, and after pardoned them. But when the time past is set downe in generall termes, and without any certaine limitation, or with the Adverbs *Jadis*, *auparavant*, *il y a long-temps*, *onques*, *jamais*, and the like, wee may indifferently use either the definite or indefinite; *Au commencement que je m'appliquay*, or *que je me suis appliqué à composer cet œuvre*, in the beginning when I applied my selfe to compose this worke. *Estant dernièrement à Paris*, *je vy le Roy*, or *j'ay veu le Roy*, the last time I was at Paris I saw the King, &c. But *au temps passé*, *quelquefois*, *autrefois*, pieça seeme better with the indefinite, & when we limit some thing by parts of our age, *En ma jeunesse*, *durant mon enfance*, *moy estant âgé de vingt ans*, *j'ay fait*, *j'ay dit*, *j'ay escrit*, &c. In my youth, during my childhood, I being 20. yeares old, I did, I said, I wrote, &c. Yet there is no great difference.

So the Imperfect or perfect are indifferently used, when the action done is onely exprest without respect to the time of its continuance, *vous Haranguastes mieux hier en l'assemblée où vous fustes*, *que je ne vous vey onques haranguer*; or *vous haranguiez mieux hier en l'assemblée où vous'estiez*, *que je ne vous avois jamais ouï faire*, you made your Oration yesterday in the assembly, better than ever I heard you make any.

The redoubled tenses keepe the same lawes, as touching the respect of the definite or indefinite time, as their preterperfects, whose pluperfects they are.

For brevities, wee omit the use of the Tenses Optative and Subjunctive, as not being so difficult as the former.

These verbes, *Sçavoir*, *voir*, *connoistre*, *affirmer*, *reconnoistre*, *apercevoir*, *considerer*, *regarder*, *noter*, *contempler*,

templer, oïr, sentir, toucher, goûter, taster, trouver, savourer, entendre, juger, se souvenir, ramentenir, reciter, raconter, narrer, maintenir, soustenir for tenir, and other like, which affirme a thing with certainty, and have *Que* after them, require the Verbe following *que*, to be of the Indicative Moode; as, *J'ay entendu que vous avez oïy nouvelles de la part de vos amis*, I have heard that you heard newes from your friends. But if the speech be Interrogative, conditionall, or negative, after *que* may bee used the Indicative, or Optative indifferently; *Je ne sçavois pas que vous esliez*, or *fussiez de mes parens*, I knew not that you were one of my kinsmen, &c.

These Verbes *Penser, croire, estimer* for *penſer, cūder, tenir, imaginer, douter, soupçonner, opiner, avoir opinion, s'espoïr, estre aise, or joyeux, or marry, or des-plaisant, s'ennuyer, s'esmerveiller, s'esbahir, s'estonner*, and the like, shewing an emotion of minde betwixt assurance and uncertaintie, after *Que*, will have verbes of the Indicative or Optative Moodes indifferently; *Il pense que lon le craint*, or *craigne*, he thinkes that men feare him. But in speeches negative, conditionall and interrogative, the Optative hath better grace; *Soupçonnez-vous que l'on vous vueille mort?* do you suspect that they wish you dead?

These Verbes, *Commander, enjoindre, encharger, conseiller, soigner, ordonner* for *commander, regarder, voir*, and *adviser* for *prendre garde*; *suader, mettre ordre, mettre peine, pourvoir, induire, instiguer, avancer, haster, moyenner, tenir la main, prendre garde, avoir soin*, and other like, of impulsion or provision to a thing; also verbes of willing, permission and necessity, and their contraries; as *Vouloir, desirer, souhaiter, entendre*, to intend, *falloir, pourchasser, requerir, demander, prier, inviter, semondre, accorder, permettre, souffrir, endurer, tolerer, consentir*, and *deffendre, empescher, prohiber, dissuader*,

dissuader, détourner, dénouvoir, divertir, retarder, craindre, apprehender for *craindre*, *abhorrer, refuser, nier, ignorer, differer, reculer*, &c. all these with *Que* following them, will have after *que* verbes of the Optative mood, imperfect and pluperfect tenses; *On vous avoit bien conseillé que vous pourvenissiez d'heure à vos affaires*, you were counselled to provide betimes for your affairs. *Vous plaist-il que je vous tiène compagnie?* will it please you that I keepe you company? *J'ignore que vous puissiez faire ce dont vous vous vantez*, I know not whether you can doe that which you boast of. *Il se daigna que je luy aidasse*, he disdained that I should helpe him.

All these Verbes may also elegantly have after them a verbe of the infinitive Mood, without *que*; as *Je veux estudier*, I will studie. *Vous desirez sçavoir la langue Françoisse*, you desire to have skill in the French tongue. *Je pense l'entendre*, I thinke I understand it. And this is when the said infinitive concerneth one same person, *Je veux escrire des lettres*, I will write Letters; *vous desirez apprendre*, you desire to learne. Or else, when a personal Pronoun is set before the first verb, *Je vous prieray d'aimer la vertu*, I intreat you to love vertue. Of this sort are the verbes following: *Je veux, je cuide, je pense, je croy, j'ose, je doy, je puis, il faut, je sçay, j'estime, j'imagine, je semble, je vay, j'oy, je voy, je sen, j'apperçoy, je connoy, j'enten* for *j'oy, je remarque, je note, je considere, je contemple, je laisse, je souffre, j'endure, je permets*.

These verbes require an infinitive with *de* afore it; *Je crain, j'empesche, je deffen, prohibe, dissuade, destourne, retarde, destourbe, diverti, recule, refuse, differe, permets*, with a Dative of the person; also *Je mesjoûis, je me fâsche, ennuye, Esmerveille, Esbahi, estonne, jouncie, lasse*; also *je commande, enjoins, ordonne, suade, haste, instigue, encharge, conseille, avance, accorde, entrepren*;
And

And *Je m'atten*, vante, diligente, despesche; and *J'en garde*, meus, esmeus, occasionne, presse, approche, excuse, dispense, il suffit, il reste, il me déplaist, and many other impersonalls; as *j'ay crain d'importaner mes amis*, I feare to importune my frends, *Vous m'avez empêché de faire mon profit*, you have hindred me from making my profit, *je m'esjoüis d'apprendre*, I rejoyce to learne.

Also Infinitives have de afore them, when they follow Substantives or Adjectives expressing the moving, or materiall cause; as *Soigneux d'estudier*, carefull to study. *Content de faire plaisir*, content to doe pleasure. *Las de courir*, weary with running, *enrouïé de prier*, hoarse with praying, *envie d'apprendre*, desire of learning. *Loisir d'escire*, leasure of writing; and others, where the Latines use the Gerund in *di*.

These verbes require an infinitive with *à* afore it; *J'appren*, *j'appreste*, *j'estudie*, *enseigne*, *induy*, *esmeu*, *instruy*, *incite*, *conduy*, *adresse*, *appareille*, *tends*, *occupe*, *embesongne*, *reduy*, *atten*, *prepare*, *exerce*, *pourchasse*, *parvien*, *pousse*, *enten for pren garde*, *poursuy*, *attente*, *nuy*, *addonne*, *incline*, *panche*, *amuse*, *employe*, *applique*, *acharne*, *obstine*, *opiniastre*, *façonne*, *accommode*, *approprie*, *adextre*, *habilité*, *adapte*, *dedie*, *destine*, *consacre*, *vouë*, *abandonne*, *expose*, *commence*; *J'appren à parler François*, I learne to speake French. *Vous apprestez-vous à partir?* doe you make your selfe ready to depart? To conclude, all Verbes and Nounes signifying profit or disprofit, hurting, pleasure, or belonging to any thing, require an infinitive with *à*; as *diligent à chercher son profit*, diligent in seeking his profite. *Facile* or *difficile à apprendre*, easie, or hard to learne. *Plaisant à ouïr*, pleasant to heare. *Prompt à secourir*, readie to succour. And where the Latine useth the Gerund in *do*, or the Preposition *ad*; *Passer le temps à estudier*, to passe his time in study. *Prendre plaisir à joüir*, to take pleasure in

in playing. Or when the Latines use the Participle in *Dus*; as *une maison à loër*, a house to let. *Une fille à marier*, a maiden to be married. *Ce qui est fait n'est pas à faire*, that which is done is not to doe. And so after *j'ay*, importing either need; as *Qu'avez vous à faire?* what have you to doe? *j'ay à estudier*, I have to study, *à écrire*, to write: Or command, *Le Capitaine s'escria que tous eussent à le suivre*, & *que nul n'eust à se feindre*, the Captaine cried out that they all should follow him, and that none should spare himselfe: Or the finall cause, *Bailler ses souliers à refaire*, to give his shooes to be mended, *un livre à relier*, a book to be bound, *Prendre une terre à labourer*, to take a land to husband, or till. *Une vigne à marrer*, a vineyard to dresse, *un jardin à façonner*, a Garden to dresse.

Some verbes require an infinitive, either without a preposition, or with *De*; as *je delibere apprendre*, or *d'apprendre*, I purpose to learne, *je desire sçavoir* or *de sçavoir*, I desire to know, so *J'espere*, *je promets*, *permets*, *pretens*, *J'enten*, I intend, *je prie*, *Souhaite*, *requier*, *demande*, *souffre*, *endure*, *imagine*, *assure*, *pleuvie*, *garanty*, *daigne*, *dédaigne*, *crain*.

Some, either with *de* or *à*; *J'essaye de or à faire mon profit*, I trie to make my profit; so *Je m'efforce, esvertuë*, *peine*, *travaille*, *incommode*, *tâsche*, *commande*, *refuse*, *recule*, *differe*, *semonds*, *invite*, *convie*, *poursuy*, *pourchasse*, *attente*, *solicite*, *instigue*, *meus*, *esmeus*, *pousse*, and *Je regarde*, *advise*, *pense for soigner*, and *prendre garde*; *J'oblige*, *j'engage*, *condamne*, *congedie*, *facilite*, *delecte*, *esbats*, *resjoüys*. Other verbes there are which may have infinitives after them all three wayes in one sense; as *Je contrain*, *requier*, *demande*, *souhaite*, *desire*, *refous*, *delibere*, *entrepren*, *j'abhorre*, *refusc*, *desdaigne*, *aprehende*, *mesprise*, *abomine*: And some all three waies in a divers sense; *j'enten parler*, I understand or heare speake: *J'enten de parler*, I meane of speaking, or I intend to speak:

je m'enten à parler, I minde to speake, I heare my selfe speake. *Je vien escrire*, I come to write. *Je vien d'escrire*, I come from writing: *Je vien à escrire*, I come for to write, &c.

An Infinitive active hath a passive sense, when it followeth the verbe *Faire*, or these verbes of senses, *Voir*, *voir*, *sentir*, *entendre*, *appercevoir*, *regarder*; also *Laisser*, *permettre*, *endurer*, *souffrir*; as *Je feray imprimer mon liure*, I will cause my booke to be printed. *Je le vei mettre en prison*, I saw him put in prison. *Je vous feray battre*, I will make you be beaten. *J'oy chanter une chanson*, I heare a song sung.

The verbe *Faire* with *Ne* afore it, and *Que* after it, with *de* before an Infinitive, inferreth a thing to be but newly done, *Je ne fay que d'arriver*, I doe but now arrive, or I am but newly arrived. *Il ne fait que de sortir*, he doth but now come forth, or he is new gone forth. But in the same phrases, if the Infinitive have not *de* afore it, it importeth a continuance without ceasing; *Pous ne faites qu'estudier*, you doe nothing but study.

The Infinitive not depending on another verbe, wee use to signifie a sudden hastinesse of action; *Nous chargeons brusquement l'ennemy*, & *luy de reculer*, & *nous de le poursuivre*, wee furiously charge the enemy, and suddenly he flyes backe, and we as swiftly pursue him. *Il estoit yvre & se laisse tomber*, & *chacun de rire*, he was drunken and fell down, and presently each man fell a laughing. Where you see *Et* and *De* (with a nominative betweene) set afore that infinitive.

Pour and *à fin de* are set afore infinitives to declare the finall-cause, and in answer to a question made by *Pourquoy*, or *à quelle fin*, as *Pourquoy estes vous venu en France ? pour apprendre la langue*, wherefore came you into France ? to learne the language; or *à fin d'apprendre*, that I might learne. *Pourquoy*, or *à quelle fin portez vous l'espee ? pour*, or *à fin de me deffendre au besoin*,

besoin, wherefore or to what end do you weare a sword? for to defend, or that I may defend, or to the end I may defend my selfe when need shall be.

Infinitives are very often used for Nounes substantives in the singular number; *Couchez vostre dire par escrit*, set downe your saying in writing. *Ne vous arrestez au parler du monde*, stand not upon the speech of the world. *Tout mon pouvoir ne scauroit acquiter mon devoir envers vous*, all my power, or all that I can doe, cannot acquit me of my duty towards you. And so with some prepositions, especially *sans*, it is expressed in English by the Participle active in *ing*; as *Par bien servir & loyall estre, de serviteur on devient maistre*, by serving well and being faithfull, of a servant one becomes a master. *Vous me haïssez sans vous avoir fait desplaisir*, you hate me without having done you displeasure: *Sans cultiver & ensemençer, la terre ne produit que ronces & chardons, aussi sans endoctriner les esprits, ils ne font que gu'en vices*, without tilling and sowing, the earth bringeth forth but briars and thistles, so also without instructing the mindes, they onely fructifie in vices. So with *Pour*; *Il fut decapité pour avoir trahy le chasteau*, he was beheaded for having betrayed the Castle. Also with *Trop*; *Trop parler nuit, trop grater cuit*, too much scratching causeth smart, and too much speaking hurteth. Further, the imperfect tense infinitive *Avoir* is used with the preposition *apres* afore it, as *Après avoir leu vos Lettres*, after I had read your Letters. *Après avoir constamment attendu*, after he had constantly waited. *Après avoir assez connu vostre intention*, after I had sufficiently knowne your intention.

5. Of Participles.

A Participle of the present tense in *ant*, is joyned to all numbers and persons of the verbe *Avoir*, so signifying a continuance of action; as *Fallois*
racontant

racontant mes douleurs, I went rehearsing my sorrowes;
Plusieurs ennemis me vont rongeant ; or *rongeans* , many
 enemies goe consuming me.

This remayning a meere Participle, is not tied to follow the Gender of the substantive , but in it Masculine forme (being of the common gender) seemes to goe more fluently. *La rosée tombant du ciel ensemble la terre*, the dewe falling from heaven makes the earth fruitfull. *Les femmes se fardans, rendent suspecte leur pudicité*, women that paint themselves , make their chastity bee suspected. Yet in the plurall number, it may follow the substantive ; *Les vertus reiglant la vie humaine sont bien seantes* , the vertues ruling mans life are well be-seeming: which may be said also, *Les vertus qui reignent*, &c. And when this Participle is onely used adjectively, it must agree with it substantive; *C'est une vertu bien seante que la modestie* , modestie is a well-beseeming vertue. It is a meere Participle , when it attributes an action , or effect comming from the substantive : It is meerely an adjective, when it attributes a quality adherent.

In like sort , the participle passive , serving for an adjective , must agree with it substantive ; *Un Royaume divisé ne subsistera point, & la cité des-unie sera desolée*, a Kingdome divided will not subsist , and a City dis-united will be desolate. Thus also with all verbes having *Je suis* for auxiliar. But being joyned to the auxiliar active , to forme the compound tenses , the use is more difficult , and therefore wee must observe these rules. 1 In speaking by verbes actives transitives with an accusative case , if the participle common goe before the accusative (which is the substantive upon which it worketh) it is not tied to gender, nor to number, but is pronounced as masculine singular ; *J'ay enbui appris une belle leçon*, I have learned to day a faire lesson *Un tel m'a dit des nouvelles de nostre país*, such a one hath told me

the same newes of our countrie. And the impersonall composed of the particule *On*, and of the verbe active, hath the same construction.

2. But if the said Participle comes after his substantive patient, on which it worketh, and is referred to it by meanes of a Relative or Pronoun accusative coming betweene, then must it agree with it in gender and number; *J'ay receu les livres que j'avois achetez*, I have received the bookes that I had bought. *Vous souviene de cette leçon que vous avez ouïe*, remember this lesson which you have heard. The same also when the substantive is not expressed, but understood; as speaking to a woman, *Qui vous a conduite venant icy?* who brought you hither when you came? *Il m'y a amenée*, he brought me thither. And here falleth out two observations: the first, when this participle is not referred to an accusative, but to a dative case, then it doth not agree with it, but remaineth singular, or neuter; as speaking of women, *Je leur ay obéi de bon cœur*, I have obeyed them with a good heart. *Je leur ay servi*, I have served them. *Elles m'ont plu pour leur vertu & honnêteté*. The second is, that although it bee referred to an Accusative; yet if there follow it some infinitive, it may indifferently either agree with it accusative, or remaine singular and masculine; as *Avez-vous veu la Royne?* Oüy, *je l'ay veu parler*, or *je l'ay veu parler à Monsieur l'Ambassadeur*; saw you the Queene? yes, I saw her speake to my Lord Embassadour. *Avoir-il déjà fait sa harangue?* Non, mais *je la luy ay ouïe prononcer*, or *je la luy ay ouïe prononcer*, had he already done his oration? No, but I heard him pronounce it.

3. When this participle is used with the passive auxiliar *Je suis*, it must (as we have above noted) agree with it substantive nominative, (and not accusative) whether it goe afore or after; as, *De nostre temps sont advenues choses memorables*, in our time memorable things

things are come to passe. *Les Gaules furent jadis conquises par Cesar*, the Gaules were long agoe conquered by Cesar. *Renduës que furent les lettres de Cesar aux Consuls*, Cessars letters being delivered to the Consuls.

4. The auxiliar participles *Ayant ayans*, *estant estans*, are never used in the feminine forme (to say *Ayante*, *estante*, &c.) but are ever of the common gender: and so *Esté* varieth not at all; for we never say *Estée*, nor *Ester*.

Our participles of active termination, are sometimes used for substantives masculine, as *Le Croissant*, the halfe Moone. *Le levant*, the rising. *Le couchant*, the setting. *Le trenchant*, the edge. *Le courant de l'eau*, the running course, or streame of the water. *Le pendant d'une espée*, a sword-hanger, &c.

Also the Participles passive, or preterite, being made feminines, doe oftentimes serve for feminine Noun: substantives verballs; as *Allée*, *Arrivée*, *Entrée*, *Sortie*, *Couvée*, *Issuë*, *Veuë*, *Departie*, *Venuë*, *Saillie*, *Cruë*, *Assemblée*, *Prise*, *Entreprise*, *Mise*, *Entremise*, *Montée*, *Devalée*, *Crainte*, *Contrainte*, *Portée*, &c.

The Syntax of Adverbs, Conjunctions, and Prepositions.

Tant, and *Autant*, when they import a simple quantity, without comparison, have *Que* (not *Quant*) for their redditive, and the speech being wholly affirmative, we may use them indifferently, as *J'ay receu du Roy tant de faveurs que j'ay voulu*, or *autant de faveurs*, &c. I have received from the King so many, or as many favours, as I desired. But if after *Que* the speech bee negative, then must *tant* onely, and not *autant* be used, as *J'ay tant receu de biens de Dieu, que je ne les sçaurais nombrer*, I have received so many good things from God

God, that I cannot number them.

Plus and *Moins* have *De* after them; as *Craſſus avoir plus de riſheſſe que Caton*, mais moins d'honneur, *Craſſus* had more riches than *Cato*, but leſſe honour.

Si and *auffi* are uſed afore Adjectives & Adverbs, but *ſi* more elegantly; and *Tant* and *Autant* alſo afore Subſtantives, but *tant* more elegantly: *Je ne ſuis ſi riche que vous*, I am not ſo rich as you; *J'ay autant d'honneur en ma vie qu'aucun autre*, I have as much reputation in my life as any other. So *ſi bon*, ſo faire, *ſi bon*, ſo good, *ſi ſagement*, ſo wiſely, *ſi promptement*, ſo readily: but we may not ſay, *Il eſt ſi mon amy*, or *il a ſi joié*, but *Il eſt tant mon amy que rien plus*, he is ſo much my friend, as nothing can be more: *Il a tant joié à la Paume qu'il en eſt malade*, he hath plaid ſo much at Tennis, that he is ſicke of it.

Si doth ſometime (applied to contradict a ſpeech afore-going) ſignifie *Yet*; *Vous me voulez mal, ſi ne vous ſis-je jamais tort*, or *ſi eſt-ce que je ne vous ſis jamais tort*, you wiſh me ill, yet I never did you wrong.

Nenny, is uſed in answer, abſolutely: *Voulez-vous venir? nenny*, will you come? no.

Non, is either afore Nounes, Pronounes, Adverbs and Participles, which are meereſy Adjectives; *Je ſuis icy venu, non, afin de paſſer inutilement mon temps*, mais pour apprendre, I am come hither, not to paſſe away my time unprofitably, but for to learne. And it muſt not be ſet afore verbs, or participles governing a caſe after them, for then muſt *Ne* be uſed, *Je ne ſuis pas venu pour perdre le temps*, I am not come for to loſe time. Or abſolutely, or in Negative answers made by one of theſe verbs, *faire*, *avoir*, *eſtre*, *ſavoir*, *vouloir*, as *Dites moy voſtre nom; Non ſeray*; tell me your name: I will not. *Voila voſtre hoſte, non eſt*, there is your hoſt: it is not. *Avez-vous eſté à Genes? Non*, have you been at Genoa? no. It is ſometime alſo uſed wiſh *point*; as *Je vous donne*

ne cela, non point pour m'acquiter des obligations que je vous ay, mais pour tesmoignage du souvenir que j'ay de vous; this I give you, not to acquit me of the bond of kindnesse that I owe you, but to testifie my remembrance of you.

Pas and *Point*, doe but fill up a negation, and doe differ very little: *point* agrees best to things bearing quantity; *Je n'ay point d'argent*, I have no money; *point de puissance*, *point d'asprit*, no power; no wit. And it is often used absolutely in answers. *Pas* serveth for a simple denying, of quality, but never absolutely as *point*. These two are sometimes omitted; namely, 1. In conditional speeches, expressed by the Latine *Nisi*, afore a verbe; *Si je ne vous aymoïs*, if I did not love you; *Si vous ne m'estiez cher*, *je n'aurois tel soin de vous*, if you were not deare unto me, I would not have such a care of you. 2. In speeches, where *Ne* followeth the Relatives *Qui*, *que*, *lequel*, *dont*, in Latine, expressed by *Quin*, or *quid non*: *Je ne vy jamais personne, qui ne fust bien aise d'estre loué*, I never saw any which was not glad to bee praised; *à qui on ne fasse plaisir de le louer*, but tooke a pleasure to bee commended. *Il n'y a homme qui ne peche*, there is no man but sinneth; or which sinneth not. *Il ne fait rien dont il ne se repente*, he doth nothing but he repents him of it; or which he doth not repent him of, or of which he doth not repent himself. 3. In asking a question, with *que ne*; as *Que ne faites vous vostre devoir*? why do you not your duty? *que n'estudiez-vous*? why do you not study? 4. In speeches contayning some hindrance, or aforewarning against inconvénience; as, *Sauvez-vous que l'on ne vous empoigne*, save you, that you be not laid hands on. *Gardez que ne soyez decouvert*, take heed you be not discovered. 5. When we use the verbe *Sçavoir* for *pouvoir*; as, *Je ne sçauroy veiller*, I cannot watch. 6. Lastly, when one of these are used to fill up the negation, *Rien*, *jamais*, *nul*, *null*.

avecques personne, aucun, gueres, onc, quelconque; as, *Je ne demande rien*, I aske nothing, *Je ne vous connois onc*, I never knew you. Nul ne peut servir à deux maistres, no man can serve two masters. Il n'a gueres de soin, hee hath not much care, or but little care. Il n'y a personne, there is no body.

Also note, that when *Que* commeth afore *Ne*, without point, *pas*, or any of the above-said, then it loseth its negative force; as *Il est plus sçavant que ne sont ses compagnons*, hee is more learned than are his fellows. Or after *Ne*; as, *Je ne connois que vous en ceste ville*, I know none but you in this towne.

Also note, that *jamais*, (without *Ne*) having *à*; or *pour* afore it, signifieth Ever: ad that both it and *Rien*, with some of the others, may bee also used absolutely (without *ne*) for negatives; as, *Cela est moins que rien*, that is lesse than nothing.

Que ne, and *De peur que*, are thus used: *Ne faites mal à personne*, que mal ne vous en prenne, doe evill to no man, that evill come not to you for it; or lest, &c. or *De peur que mal ne vous en advienne*, for feare lest evill happen unto you. But if we say, *De peur que mal ne vous en prenne pas*, the English is, For feare lest evill come not unto you.

These propositions will have Genitive cases after them, with *de*, *du*, *dés*: *Arriere, auprès, au long, au prix, près, à l'environ, aux environs, autour, à l'entour, au travers, à travers, à l'esgard, au regard, à l'encontre, le long, au rebours, aux entours, à rebours, à l'endroit, loing, au loing, au devant, au derriere, au dehors, au dedans, au dessus, au dessous, au deçà, au delà, vis à vis, &c.*

These *Jusque*, *jusques*, and *en esgard* require a Dative, with *à*, *au*, *à l'*, *aux*.

En, being set afore a Nounne, without an article betweene, may sometime signifie the Latine *Instar*; as, *parler en sage personnage*, to speake like a wise man.

An Index, interpreting such Nounes and Verbes, as are unenglished in the Grammar.

- A** *Age*, age.
Abandonner, to forsake, or give over.
abaisser, to abase, depresse.
abattre, to beate downe.
abbé, an Abbot.
abhorrer, to abhorre.
abborder, to arrive.
abisme, a bottomlesse pit.
abnegation, a denyall.
aboutir, to waxe ripe, to end, &c.
abreger, to shorten, or abbreviate.
absence, absence.
abstenir, to abstaine.
abricot, an apricocke.
absoudre, to absolve.
absynthe, wormewoode.
accès, or *accez*, an access, a fit of.
accident, an accident.
accepter, to accept.
accourir, to run unto.
acquiesce, to overtake.
accommoder, to accommodate.
accorder, to accord, or agree unto.
accoster, to draw neere to.
accroche, a hooke, clasp.
accrostiche, accrosticke.
accueillir, to entertaine.
accueil, entertainment.
acharner, to flesh.
acier, Steele.
acquiter, to acquit.
acquérir, to get, to acquire.
accroire, as *faire accroire*, to make to beleeve, to trust.
accroistre, to encrease.
accuser, to accuse.
acte, *action*, an action, act.
acre, sharpe, tart, cager.
acheter, to buy.
adapter, to fit unto, to adapt.
adresser, to direct unto.
S'addonner, to give himselfe unto.
adextre, to make fitte, quicke.
adiectiō, an adding to.
adjuger, to adjudge.
admettre

Admettre, to admit.
Admiral, an Admirall.
admirer, to admire.
administrer, to administer.
adoption, adoption.
adoucir, to sweeten, to assuage.
Il advient, it happeneth.
adviser, to advise, be-thinke.
advancer, to set forward, to advance.
adverbe, an adverb.
adversité, adversity.
adversaire, an adversarie.
adultere, F. adultery, and adulterer, M.
Advocat, an Advocate, a Counsellor.
advocaceau, a petty advocate.
Affable, affable, courteous.
affadir, to make, or grow unsavorie.
affection, affection.
affaire, business.
affermir, to make firme, establish.
affirmer, to affirme.
affoiblir, to make feeble, to weaken.
affranchir, to make free, to free.
Agreer, to bee to ones liking.
agrandir, to make great,

or waxe great.
agresir, to make slender, or to grow slender, or small.
aban, the crie of one that sore labourerh.
abanner, to take great paines.
aigre, sowre, tart.
aimable, amiable, lovely.
aigrir, to sharpen, exasperate.
ajeunir, to make young, wax young.
aigu, sharpe.
Aigle, an Eagle.
aïse, ease, full content; glad.
aide, helpe, aide.
ail, garlicke.
alaïster, to give sucke to.
ataigre, chearefull.
alarme, an alarum.
alentir, to relent, slacken, be appeased.
aleger, to ease.
allée, a going, a gate, pase, allie.
Allemagne, Germanie.
S'aliester, to goe sicke to bed, lie bed-ridden.
alonger, to lengthen, make long.
alexitere, a preservative against poyson.
alphabet, an A.B.C.

K 3

amaigrir,

- amaigrir*, to make leane,
 or to wax leane.
ambre, amber.
ame, the soule.
ambuscade, an ambuscado.
ambition, ambition.
amy, a friend.
amitié, friendship.
amender, to amend.
amenuiser, to lessen, grow
 lesse.
amour, love.
amollir, to soften, to mol-
 lific.
amoindrir, to lessen, wax
 lesse.
amoitir, to moisten, wax
 moist.
amuser, to amuse, to put, or
 to be in a dump.
Anagramme, an Anagram.
ancestres, Ancestors.
ancre, an anker.
annaliste, a Chronicler.
Ange, an Angel.
Anglois, English, an English
 man.
anéantir, to annihilate, to
 disannull, bring to no-
 thing.
angle, a corner, an angle.
anonchalir, to make care-
 lesse or negligent, or
 waxe so.
antimoine, antimonie.
antre, a cave, a denne.
- S'annuister*, to waxe night.
antique, ancient, antike.
apparence, shew, appea-
 rance.
apetisser, to make litte.
apauvrir, to make poore,
 to wax poore.
apesantir, to make heavie,
 to wax heavie.
appareiller, to prepare, or
 make ready.
appartenir, to pertaine, or
 belong.
Il appartient, it belon-
 geth.
Il appert, il apparait, it
 appeareth.
Il s'apperçoit, it is per-
 ceived.
Il s'apporte, it is brought.
apophthegme, an Apoph-
 theme.
aposter, to suborne.
Apostre, an Apostle.
Apostolique, Apostolicall.
apostume, an Impostume.
appliquer, to apply.
apprendre, to learne.
apprester, to make ready.
approcher, to draw neere.
appropriier, to appropriate.
appuy, a prop.
arbre, a tree.
arbrisseau, a shrub.
Architeſte, an Architect,
 or overseer for building.
arbitre,

arbitre, an arbiter.
archier, an Archer. *Archer*.
archerot, a little archer.
Archange, an Archangel.
Arch'evêsché, an Archbishopricke.
arme, a weapon.
arriver, to arrive, come.
Il Arrive, there cometh.
arrivée, an arrivall.
artiste, an Artift.
asne, an Ass.
asnon, a little Ass, Ass-fole.
asperges, sperage.
asperger, to sprinkle.
aspre, sharp, tart, harsh.
astres, the starres.
assemblée, an assembly.
asseurer, to assure.
assoir, *asséoir*, to set, sit, settle.
astraindre, to binde fast, to constraine.
atteindre, to reach unto, to attaine.
attester, to affirme, testifye.
atheiste, an atheist.
attenter, to attempt.
attendre, to attend, expect, waite for.
Je m'attend, I trust to, rely upon,

attaire, to attract, draw to.
attrait, attracted, drawne.
avare, covetous.
aveugle, blinde.
audience, audience.
auditoire, an auditorie.
avancer, see *Advancer*.
avenir, to happen.
aveindre, to draw out, bring forth.
auteur, an author.
aprivoiser, to tame.
arondir, to make round.
asprir, to sharpen, exasperate.
atiedir, to waxe lukewarme, or to make so.
attendrir, to make tender, or to grow tender.
assagir, to make wise.
assecher, to drie up.
avachir, to faile, grow heartlesse.
augmenter, to encrease.
axiome, an Axiome.
ayeul, a grand father.
Babil, babling, prattle.
Bail, a gardian.
Bailler, to give.
Baler, to dance.
Balier, to sweepe.
Bale, a bullet, a ball, a packe.

Balafre, a slash over the face.
Baiffer, to bow downe, stoope.
bande, a swarthband, fillet, &c.
bander, to binde, swaddle.
baptiser, to baptise.
baptisme, baptism.
baptistère, a Font.
barill, a barell.
bas, low.
Basle, the city Basil.
Basque, a Biscayne.
baster, to put on a pack-saddle.
Bastille, a Fortresse.
bastion, a fortification so called.
baston, a staffe.
bastonade, a bastonado, or beating with a cudgell.
baue, some, flaver, drivel.
baulme, or baume, balme.
beauté, beautie.
besoing, need.
beste, a beast.
bestiole, *bestellette*, a little beast.
bestail, cattell.
bestialité, beastlinesse.
beau, *belle*, faire.
benin, *benigne*, gentle, meeke.
belistre, a rogue, begger.
bec, the bill of a bird.

benefice, a benefite.
begue, fumbling in speech.
beurre, butter.
Bible, the Bible.
Bièvre, a Beaver.
bicle, *bicle*, squint-eyed.
bis, browne, course.
birrasque, a tempest of whirlwinde at sea.
biscaye, a vantage at Tennis.
biscuit, bisket.
bitume, bitumen.
blanc, white.
blanchet, *blanchelet*, somewhat white.
blanchir, to whiten.
blasme, blame.
blasmer, to blame.
blasphème, blasphemie.
blasphemer, to blaspheme.
blesme, pale, wanne.
blondir, to waxe yellow.
boisson, drinke.
bonace, *bonasse*, a calme.
bon, good.
bonté, goodnesse.
bord, a welc, hem.
bosquet, a thicket, grove.
borgne, one-eyed.
boucle, a buckle.
bourde, a jest.
bourgeois, a Burgesse.
bouger, to stirre, budge.
branler, to totter, shake.
branle, a totter, shake, dance.

brave,

brave, brave, braggard.
 brief, brief, short.
 brebis, a sheepe.
 broüillir, to disorder.
 brun, browne.
 bruneau, brumet, some-
 what browne.
 brunir, to bee browne,
 obscure.
 brusler, to burne.
 brusque, briske, lively, also
 rash, rude.
 buffe, a buffe.
 buffet, a court-cupboord.
 busquer, to shift, filch.
 Caban, a felt cloake.
 cable, a cable.
 cage, a cage.
 cane, a Ducke.
 cagnor, a little dog.
 canal, a channell.
 cantique, a song.
 camarade, a camarade.
 camp, a camp.
 cameriste, a chamber-fel-
 low.
 cancre, a crab-fish.
 capriole, a caper.
 caprice, a humour, capri-
 chio.
 capricorne, capricorne.
 carme, a verse.
 casque, a caske, a head-
 peece.
 casaque, a cassocke.
 catalogue, a catalogue.

catechisme, a catechisme.
 cataplasme, a cataplasme.
 catharre, a rheume.
 cavallat, a little horse.
 caviller, to cavill.
 cause, a cause.
 caustique, caustike.
 Cedula, a cedula.
 circle, a circle.
 Caille, a quail.
 cerne, circle.
 celuy, hee.
 ceux, them.
 cetuy, this man, he.
 cendre, ashes.
 centre, the cêtre of a circle.
 chair, flesh.
 celeste, heavenly.
 celebre, famous.
 centuple, an hundred fold.
 cercueil, a coffin.
 certain, certaine.
 champs, fields, countrie.
 change, change.
 chambre, a chamber.
 chancre, a canker, cancer.
 charure, hempe.
 chapitre, a chapter.
 caractere, a character.
 chaste, chaste.
 chasteté, chastity.
 chasteau, a Castle.
 chastelet, a little castle.
 chat, a cat.
 chaton, a young cat, kit-
 tling.

charme,

- charme*, a charme.
chauffee, a Causey.
changer, to change.
charger, to charge, to load.
chanzir, to be musty.
Il chaut, *chaloir*, to care for.
chef, a head, chiefe.
chemin, the way.
Il chet, see *cheor*, or *choir*.
cheval, a horse.
chevestre, a halter, a head-stall.
chemise, a shirt, or smock.
chien, a dog.
Chirurgien, a Chirurgian.
chiche, niggard.
chose, a thing.
cholere, *colere*, choller.
chorde, a corde.
chiquenaude, a fillip.
chifre, a cipher.
choir, to fall; *cheoir*.
chresme, cream, a crisom.
Chrestien, a Christian.
cichorée, hearb Succorie.
cierge, a big wax candle.
ciseaux, a paire of sizzers.
cime, the top.
cigne, a Swan.
cire, wax.
cimetiere, a Church-yard.
cimeterre, a semitar.
ciboire, a Pix.
cidre, Sider.
cistne, *sistne*, a brasle. Timbroll.
ciel, heavens.
citron, a Citron.
cieulx, heaven.
cisterne, a Cesterno.
circonstance, circumstance.
cil, the haire of the eyelide.
clou, a naile.
clef, a key.
clerc, a Clerke, Clergie man.
clergeon, a petty clorke.
cloistre, a Cloister.
client, a client.
clistere, a Clister.
clos, close, closed, shut.
cloison, an hedge, pale, or rayle inclosing.
cœur, a heart.
coise, a coise.
col, the necke.
coing, a wedge, a quince, also a corner or angle.
coffre, a coffer, a Chest.
coche, a Coach, a sow-pig.
colle, glue.
colloque, a conference.
coq, a Cocke.
combattre, to fight.
comble, fulnesse.
comere, a Comet.
commander, to command.
commencer, to begin.
commerce, commerce.
compair,

compartir, to divide.
commettre, to commit.
complaire, to please.
comprendre, to comprehend.
complexion, complexion.
compagnie, company.
compagnon, a fellow.
compter, to reckon, account.
complot, a complot.
Comte, an Earle.
cognoistre, or *connoistre*, to know.
concombre, a Cowcumber.
condamner, to condemn.
congedier, to licence, to depart, to give leave to depart.
Comté, a County, Earle-dome.
congé, leave.
concierge, a Jaylor.
Il se commet, there is committed.
confondre, to confound.
condescendre, to condescend.
concevoir, to conceive.
condouloir, to condole.
conclave, a conclave, cloister.
congre, a Conger fish.
conquerir, to conquer.
conseiller, to counsell.
consentir, to consent.
conduire, to conduct.

conjecturer, to glasse, quos
conjecture, conjecture.
considerer, to consider.
consacrer, to consecrate.
consistoir, a consistorie.
construire, to build.
constant, constant.
contagion, infection.
contenir, to containe.
contraindre, to constrain.
contempler, to behold.
cōtrefearpe, a counterfearse.
contraire, contrarie.
contr'opposer, to oppose against.
contrainte, constraint.
conventicule, a conventicle.
convenir, to agree with, to meere.
convaincre, to convince.
Il conste, it is manifest.
Il convient, it is meet.
contredire, to gain-say.
Il se cōtrouve, it is invented, imagined, fained.
contrefaire, to counterfeit.
Il se convertit, he turneth, converteth.
coriandre, Coriander.
corde, a rope, a cord.
costé, a side.
cordonnier, a shoote-maker.
corps, a body.
contester, to contest.
coude, an elbow.
courge, a gourd.

coup,

coup, a blow.
cour, a Court.
courroux, anger.
correspondre, to correspond;
 pond, to hold correspondence.
Il court, there runneth.
convier, to invite.
couvée, a brood.
couteau, a knife.
coutelet, a little knife.
couvercle, a cover.
contre, the culter of a Plow.
coulomb, a Dove, Pigeon.
couldre, to sow.
culpe, a fault, guilt.
couverir, to cover.
courbe, crooked, a bought.
cousin, a cousin.
Il couste, it costeth.
crane, the skull.
creste, Cypresse.
crible, a sieve.
crime, crime.
craindre, to feare.
crainte, feare.
Cressin, Crispin, the shoemakers saint.
croce, a crossier staffe.
crotesque, rude, confused
 works in paincing.
crieur, a crier, brawler.
croche, a hooke.
Il croist, there groweth.
crocodile, a Crocodile.

croix, a crosse.
croire, to beleeve.
Il se croir, it is beleeved.
croûler, to shake, wag.
creû, *creûe*, grown, growth.
Il se cueille, there is gathered.
Il cuit, it smarteth, stin-
 geth.
cuiure, copper.
cuidr, to thinke, deeme.
cuillier, a spoone.
cueillir, to gather, collect.
cut, the arse.
curateur, a gardian, tutor.
curieux, curious.
Danger, danger.
Damasquiner, to damaske.
Dague, a Dagger.
Dannemarc, Denmarke.
Devoir, or *Devoir*, to
 owe. *debre*, debt.
debteur, a debtour.
desbusquer, to depart, flit,
 march away.
debatre, to debate.
decevoir, to deceive.
decliner, to decline.
decés, *deceç*, a decease, or
 departing by death.
delecter, to delight.
delectable, delightfull.
delict, a fault.
defaillir, to faile, faint,
 decay.

defendre,

defendre, to defend.
deſuir, to ſlie.
decuire, to decoct.
deſaire, to undoe.
deffendre, to forbid.
deduire, to deduct, diſ-
 courſe.
degeler, to thaw.
daigner, to vouchſafe.
dedaigner, to diſdaine.
demangeaiſon, an itch.
demande, to aſke.
demandeur, an aſker, plain-
 tiſe.
demordre, to diſtaſte, for-
 goe hold.
decheoir, to fall downe
 from.
demettre, to lay downe,
 diſmiſſe, give over.
deloger, *deſloger*, to diſ-
 lodge.
delivrer, to deliver.
dedier, to dedicate.
dent, a tooth.
departir, to divide, to de-
 part.
démouvoir, to remove.
departie, a departure.
deſaiſre, a miſchance.
deſapprendre, to unlearn.
deſcendre, to deſcend.
deſconſire, to diſcomſite.
deſcoudre, to unrip.
deſcroire, to diſcredit, not
 to belevee.

deſcraiſſre, to decreaſe.
deſcrire, to deſcribe.
deſconnoiſſre, *deſcognoiſſre*,
 to unknow, forget to
 know.
Il deſmange, it itcheth.
deſmentir, to give the lye
 unto, to belie.
deſpendre, to ſpend.
deſeſperer, to deſpaire, on
 be out of hope.
deſplaire, to diſpleaſe.
Il deſplaiſt, it diſpleaſeth.
deſdire, to unſay, recant.
deſplaiſant, diſplaiſant.
deſirer, to deſire.
Se deſſeſcher, to diſparthe.
deſtiner, to deſtinate.
deſtourber, to diſturbe.
deſfourner, to turne aſide.
deſtruire, to deſtroy.
deſtendre, to unbend, una-
 ſtretch.
deſſervir, to take away.
deſordre, to writhe.
devenir, to become.
deſſir, to encloathe.
devoir, duty, to owe.
dévoler, to ſlie downe.
detracteur, a ſlanderer.
Il deut, it greeveth.
diſter, to dictate.
diſt, ſaid, a ſaying.
diminuer, to diminith.
Il ſe diſt, it is ſaid.
différer, to deſerre.

diſcourir;

- disconrir*, to discorde.
devalée, a descent.
dissoudre, to dissolve.
distratre, to distract.
Se divertir, to divert, or
 withdraw himselfe.
divers, divers.
dissentir, to dissent.
dispenser, to dispense.
dissuader, to dissuade.
divertir, to divert.
Se diligenter, to be diligēt,
 bestir himselfe, hasten.
discret, discreet.
disputer, to dispute.
Dieu, God: *Dieux*, plur.
dispos, nimble, active.
Dialogue, a Dialogue.
Diocese, a Diocesse.
dactissime, most learned.
domicile, a house, mansion.
dominer, to govern, rule.
doigt, a finger.
dompter, to tame.
docile, docible, teachable.
dominateur, a master, ruler.
donatiste, a Donatist.
donner, to give.
divorce, divorcement.
doüaire, a Dowrie.
dogue, a Mastiffe.
Docteur, a Doctor.
double, double, twofold.
douceur, sweetness, gen-
 tleness.
douter, to doubt.

- douleur*, sorrow, griefe.
doux, sweet, gentle.
dragée, sweet meates.
Duc, a Duke.
Duché, a Dukedome.
drap, cloth.
duire, to use, frame, lend to.
Il duit, it helpeth, it is
 good.
durcir, to harden.
Eau, water.
Edict, an Edict, statute.
edifice, a building.
employer, to employ.
endormir, to sleepe, fall
 asleepe.
Empereur, an Emperour.
empyreume, a drie heate.
Empire, Empire.
emplastre, a plaister.
enfant, a childe, infant.
enfanton, enfantelet, a lit-
 tle childe.
ensuir, to flee away.
encourir, to incur.
empescher, to hinder.
enfreindre, to infringe.
enclosse, to inclose.
Il ennuye, it annoyeth, it
 grieveeth.
Il s'ensuit, it followeth.
endurer, to endure.
encharger, to give in
 charge.
enjoindre, to enioyne.
engarder, to keepe from.

embesongner, to busie; im-
ploy.
ensuire, to ensue.
effect, effect.
effectuer, to effect.
enquerir, to inquire.
embellir, to beautifie.
empirer, to impair; or
make worse.
Entaier, to make foule.
encherir, to enhance the
price; make deare.
enregistrer, to Register.
enseigner, to teach.
S'ennuyer, to be grieved,
to be wearied, or vexed
with.
Entretenir, to entertaine.
entendre, to understand.
enreluire, to shine be-
tween; to appeare, give a
glimpse.
entreprendre, to undertake.
entresuivre, to follow
close, or one in necke
of another.
entrer, to enter.
entr'ouyr, to heare a little.
entr'ouvrir, to halfe open.
Epitaphe, an Epitaph.
escamper, to scape, runne
away.
escarbillat, lustie, frolicke.
escarbot, a Beetle.
escargot, a snail.

escarlatin, of Skarlet.
escarlata, Skarlet.
escarpins, pumpe.
escabeau, a stoole.
escarcelle, a powch.
escalade, a sealado, scaling.
escarre, a scarre.
escart, a discarding.
esclair, lightening.
esclairer, to shine, to
lighten.
esclandre, a slander.
escheoir, to happen, or fall
out.
esbatre, to sport.
S'esbahir, to wonder.
Il esclaire, it lighteneth.
Il s'esclaircit, it cleereth ap.
esboillir, to boile through-
ly.
engager, to ingage, pawne,
pledge.
eschaper, to escape.
erreur, error.
escient, a son escient, wit-
tingly.
eschole, a Schoole.
esclorre, to hatch forth.
escopetterie, a volly of
shot.
escorne, shame, disgrace.
escoüade, a Captains traine.
esclat, a shyer, splinter.
escouter, to hearken, to
heare.
Escosse, Scotland.
escume,

- Escume*, foame, froth,
 scumme.
Eſcu, a Crowne in money,
 a ſhield.
eſcuſſon, a ſcutcheon.
eſconduire, to denie.
eſcorce, a barke of a tree.
eſcrire, to write.
Eſgliſe, a Church.
eſguiſer, to whet.
Il ſ'eſcrit, it is written.
encliner, to incline.
endurcir, to harden.
enorgueillir, to make, or
 waxe proud.
enforcer, to enforce, ſtreng-
 then.
engourdir, to benumme.
engroſſir, to greaten, get
 with childe.
eſlever, to liſt up, raiſe.
enhardir, to embolden,
 hearten.
engraiſſer, to fatten.
emmaigrir, to make lean.
enrichir, to enrich.
envenimer, to venom.
envieillir, to waxe old.
eſclaircir, to cleere.
entrée, an entrance.
entreprise, an enterpriſe.
entremiſe, a mediation, or
 entermeddling betweene
 parties.
S'eſſorcer, to indeavour,
 ſtrive.
eſpais, thicke.
eſtroit, ſtrait, narrow.
eſponge, a ſpunge.
eſpingle, a pinne.
eſmail, an enamell.
eſmourvoir, to move, ſtirre
 up.
eſguiere, an Ewre.
eſmoudre, to grinde.
eſpandre, to ſhedde, to
 ſpill.
eſpandre, to diſperſe, ſcat-
 ter.
eſpreindre, to preſſe, ſqueeze
 out.
eſpace, a ſpace.
eſpece, a kinde of.
Eſpagne, Spaine.
eſperer, to hope.
eſpoir, eſperance, hope.
eſbouſeter, to bruſh.
eſprit, a ſpirit, minde, wit.
eſpion, a ſpie.
eſquadrón, a ſquadron.
eſquiver, to thunde, eſ-
 chew.
eſquarrir, to ſquare out.
eſquierre, a Carpenter
 ſquire.
eſquiſ, a ſkiſſe, a little
 boate.
eſtudier, to ſtudie.
eſtoille, a ſtarre.
eſtame, worſted.
eſtaſier, a foot boy.
eſté, ſummer.

estimer, to esteeme.
esteindre, to quench.
estendre, to extend, stretch.
s'estonner, to be astonished.
espaisir, to thicken.
eslargir, to enlarge.
estreir, to straiten, or
 make narrow.
esloigner, to put far away.
estage, a storie or loft.
eslire, to choose.
estropier, to mayme.
estropier, maimed, lame.
estrapade, the strapado.
estradior, a light horse-
 man.
estrade, a streete, high
 way.
estoc, the stocke of a tree.
estocade, a stoccado, or
 thrust.
estuy, a case.
esventail, a fanne.
estoffe, stufte.
esvanouyr, to vanish.
s'esvertuër, *s'evertuër*, to
 labour, strive, force
 himselfe.
evader, to escape.
evaluer, to rate, prize.
Evesque, a Bishop.
Evesché, a Bishopricke.
Eunuque, an Eunuch.
Evangeliste, an Evange-
 list.
eternel, eternall.

excès, *excesse*, *ryot*, sur-
 feit.
exclurre, to exclude.
excuser, to excuse.
exercer, to exercise.
exemple, an example.
exercice, exercise.
eviter, to avoide.
exorde, an Exordium.
expedier, to dispatch.
expedient, an helpe, fit
 meanes, shift.
experience, experience.
exploit, an exploit.
exploister, to exploit.
extreme, extreame.
exposer, to expose, expound.
s'esmerveiller, to marvell.
S'esjouyr, to rejoyce, bee
 merrie.
extraire, to extract.
Facon, fashion.
Facteur, a Factor.
Faict, a deed, fact done.
fade, unsavoury, tastelesse.
faire, to make, to doe.
Il se fait, there is done,
 made.
faillir, to faile.
faim, hunger.
fantasme, *fantosme*, a ghost,
 spirit, hobgoblin.
faner, to fade.
fascher, to anger.
Se fascher, to be angry.
façonner, to fashion.

Facilité, easinesse, facility.

Faon, a Fawne.

Faonner, a Doe to Fawne.

facile, easie.

faix, a burthen, weight.

faveur, favour.

faulx, a Sithc.

faux, false.

fer, Iron.

femme, a woman.

femmette, *femmelette*, a
little woman.

felon, fell, felonious.

ferme, firme.

fertile, fertile.

feste, a feast, holy day.

festin, a banquet, feast.

fantasque, fantastick.

fendre, to cleave.

seindre, to faine.

fenaison, hay harvest.

fenestre, a window.

feu, fire.

feutre, a Felt.

feurre, or *foarre*, straw.

fier, proud, to trust.

sient, dung.

fiction, a fiction.

fièvre, an ague, fever.

fidele, faithfull.

fil, thred.

filz, a sonne.

fin, end, also cunning.

finet, somewhat cunning.

finir, to end, to finish.

fifre, a Fife.

fiel, gall.

flasque, a flaske.

flechir, to bend, bow.

flestrir, to fade, wither.

flegme, heame.

fleuve, a river, floud.

flateur, a flatteter.

flatereau, a little flatterer.

flac, a flap, or clap.

foible, weak, feeble.

fol, a foole, or foolish.

forme, a forme.

Se Forger, to forge, ima-
gine.

foison, store, plenty.

fois, time.

forclurre, as *forclore*.

forfaire, to misdoe, forfeit.

fordorre, to exclude.

forest, a Forrest.

fortraire, to lurch.

fournir, to furnish.

force, force, strength.

fourbe, a jest, while, deceit.

foy, faith.

foye, the liver.

florir, to flourish.

frais, fresh, new.

François, Francis, a French
man.

franc, free.

fiché, untilled, fallow.

frimats, a thicke mist.

frissonner, to shiver with
cold.

frisque,

frisque, lively, briske.
froid, cold.
froncle, a felon, or un-
 come.
froidure, coldnesse, cold
 weather.
fruit, fruit.
jueillu, leafie, full of
 leaves.
funebre, Funerall, mour-
 ning.
funerailles, Funeralls.
Gabelle, impost, custome.
Gage, a gage, pledge, pawn,
 &c.
galop, a galop.
garder, to keepe.
garbe, a garbe, comelineffe,
 grace.
garde, gard, ward, keeping.
gasche, an Oare.
gastadour, a pioner.
gaspiller, to waste, lavish.
garentir, to warrant.
general, generall.
gentil, gentle, pretty.
gemeau, a twinne.
geolier, a Gaoler.
genievre, Juniper.
gesir, to lie in, to lie down.
gestes, gest, gests.
gendarme, a man of armes.
germe, a bud, a sprout.
gendre, a sonne in law.
genre, kinde.
gent, a nation, a stocke.

gencüil, a knee.
geler, to freeze.
gingembre, Ginger.
gisant, lying.
giste, a bed, a couch.
gibier, game of fowle
 hawked.
gland, an Akorne.
globe, a globe.
glaiue, a glaiue, a sword.
glu, birdlime.
goinsre, a wag, knavish lad.
gorge, the throat.
gouster, to taste.
goufre, a gulf.
gouverneur, a Governour.
gouverner, to governe.
gracieux, gracious.
grand, great.
gras, fat.
grave, grave.
grace, grace.
grandissime, most great.
grasset, *grasselet*, some-
 what fat.
graisir, or *grestir*, to wax
 slender, thin, small.
gresse, a grasse.
griffe, a claw, a talion.
griéver, to grieve.
greve, sand, gravell, shore.
grief, grievous.
Greguesque, Greekish.
Grec, Grettan, Greekish.
griller, to broyle.
gris, grey.

gros, grosse, big, a groat.
grossir, to grow bigge,
 grosse.
grouler, to stirre, sprall.
guarison, an healing.
guerir, to heale, to cure.
gueer, to wade.
guerre, warre. *Guise*, guise.
guide, a guide.
Harang, an Herring.
Haleine, breath.
hair, to hate.
bannir, to neigh.
hardy, bold.
harangue, an Oration.
hasard, hazzard.
hanter, to haunt, frequent.
hanap, a cup, a gobblet.
haute, high.
haine, hatred.
havure, an Haven.
habitable, a dwelling place.
haste, sunne-burning.
hart, a with, a halter.
haye, a hedge.
habiliter, to enable.
haim, a fish-hooke.
hameçon, a little fish-hook.
haster, to hasten.
hausser, to hoist, lift on
 high.
heaulme, an helmet.
heirier, an heire.
heritage, an inheritance.
herbage, pasture, herbage.
berce, a harrow.

herboriste, an herbalist.
heure, an heure.
heur, hap, lucke.
heureux, happy.
Hierosme, Ierome.
histoire, an historie.
homme, a man.
hommeau, *hommet*,
hommelet, a little man.
homicide, man-slaughter.
honneste, honest.
honnir, to shame.
bonheur, honour.
hongre, a gelding.
hoste, an host, a guest.
horloge, a clocke, a Diall.
huictiesme, the eight.
huyle, oyle.
humble, humble.
humeur, humour.
humide, moist.
Jaloux, Jealous.
Jambe, the legge.
Janvier, January.
Jaspe, a jasper stone.
Faunir, to waxe yellow.
jest, a counter.
Jetter, to cast, to hurle.
Jeune, young.
Idole, an Idoll.
Feu, play.
ignare, ignorant.
imaginer, to imagine.
illustrissime, most illustri-
 ous.
image, an image.

imbécille;

imbecille, weake.
Imperatrice, an Empresse.
illustre, illustrious.
improvisite, as a l'improvisite, on a sudden.
impropre, an exprobra-
tion, upbraiding.
inconvenient, an inconve-
nience.
infester, to infect.
ingredient, ingredient.
inceste, incest.
inimitié, enmitie.
infirme, weake.
ignorer, to be ignorant.
inciter, to incite.
incliner, to incline.
incommoder, to incommo-
date, hinder, trouble.
Il importe, it importeth.
insigner, to provoke.
inscrire, to inscribe.
induire, to induce.
inspirer, to inspire.
instant, instant.
intime, inward.
instruire, to instruct.
inviter, to invite.
joye, joy.
joincture, a joynt.
joly, pretty.
Investiture, an Investiture.
jouer, to play.
Joventeur, an inventor.
joue, the cheek.
joug, a yoke.

joyau, a Jewell.
intervenir, to come be-
tween. *Inclus*, included.
joindre, to joyne.
introduire, to bring in.
Il s'invente, there is in-
vented.
Il intervient, there came
betweene.
joyeux, joyfull, merrie.
issuë, the issue, end, suc-
cesse.
Italien, an Italian.
Juge, a Judge.
juger, to judge.
jument, a Mare.
jumeau, a twitne.
Guillet, the moneth July.
Furiste, a Lawyer.
juste, just, righteous.
justice, justice; righteous-
nesse.
Jusquame, henbane.
Lait, milke.
Laine, wooll.
laisser, to leave.
lange, a wollen swathe.
laqs, a snare, a grin.
lansquenet, a lance Knight.
labour, labour.
larron, a sheefe.
larronneau, a petty theefe.
largeur, bredth, largenesse,
widenesse.
lasche, slack, loose, faint,
cowardly.

- Lafcher*, to slacken, let loose.
Se Laffer, to be, or waxe weary.
leſſon, a leſſon.
leger, light.
legiſte, a Lawyer.
legume, pulſe.
leſte, quicke, lively.
lever, to raiſe.
leure, a lippe.
lexive, lie to bucke clothes.
liberalité, liberality.
liſt, a bed.
licol, a halter, a rope.
lieu, place, roome.
lièvre, a Hare.
libre, free.
lice, a liſts; alſo a bitch.
terre, Ivie.
limeſtre, a kinde of cloth, whereof hoods bee made.
liſible, which may bee read.
limbe, limbo.
limon, ſlime, mud, mire.
linge, linnen.
lion, a Lyon.
liſte, a liſt, roll, catalogue.
litige, ſuit in law, contention.
livrer, to deliver.
long, long.
longueur, length.
- loger*, to lodge.
loër, *louër*, to hire, rent out.
loñable, praiſe-worthy.
louër, to praiſe.
loup, a Wolfe.
louſche, ſquint-eyed, pur-
 blinde.
loy, law, the law.
luiſter, to wrangle.
luminaire, a light, lamp.
luſtre, a luſter, glosſe.
Muiſon, a houſe.
Main, the hand.
Magie, magicke.
Maigne, leane.
Maître, a Maſter.
maigue, whay.
maïſt, a hutch.
maïſonnette, a little houſe.
maintenir, to maintaine.
maint, many.
malade, ſicke.
maladie, ſickeſſe.
malheur, miſhap, miſfor-
 tune.
manche, a handle, a ſleeve.
mange, the maſtunge of a
 horſe.
manquer, to want.
manteau, a cloake.
manteler, a little cloake.
maquereau, a pander.
maquereſſe, a ſhe baude, a
 makerell fiſh.
marbre, marble.
- marchand*,

marchand, a merchant.
marron, the great chest-nut.
marry, sad, sory, grieved.
marroquin, Spanish leather.
Martyre, Martyrdome.
marrifson, griefe, sorrow.
marchander, to cheapen, to bargain, to traficke.
mirrer, to dig labour.
massacer, a massacre.
masque, a maske, a vizard.
mastic, masticke.
massin, a mastiffe dog.
maste, a male.
matin, the morning.
maufade, harsh, lowtish, rude. *Maudire*, to curse.
mauvais, evill, wicked.
maux, evils.
Se Mesler, to meddle, mingle, intermeddle.
mer, the sea.
mestier, an occupation, trade, also neede.
messenger, a messenger.
mesure, measure.
menstrual, menstruous.
meilleur, better.
menu, small, little, thin.
Mercier, a Haberdasher
 of small wares.
merceroi, a Pedler.
menteur, a lyar.
melon, a melon, million.
menfonge, a lye.

mesche, a match, a weeke.
meule, or *meulle*, a mil-stone.
merle, a black bird.
mercy, mercie, thanked.
mescroire, to mistrust.
mesdire, to speake evill of.
mesconnoistre, to mistake, not to know, to neglect.
mesfaire, to wrong, mis-doe.
mesprendre, to mistake.
Il Meurt, it dyeth.
Se Mettre, to set or put himselfe to it.
meurir, to ripen.
mettre peine, to endeavour, to labour, take paines.
mettre ordre, to take order.
mignard, a waton, wanton.
mignardet, *mignardelet*, a little wanton.
miel, hony.
mi-partir, to part or divide into halves.
mise, expence, layings out.
miracle, a miracle.
mil, the graine Miller.
mignon, a minion, dainty.
Ministre, a Minister.
miste, neat, spruce.
militaire, militarie.
mince, thin, fine, slender.
module, a modell.
mol, soft.
modeste, modest.

moitié, the halfe, *moitie*.
moite, moist.
Moine, a Monke.
moisson, harvest.
moirir, to make moist.
moisir, to mould, be mould-
 die.
mollir, to soften.
moleste troublesome.
mode, a manner, fashion.
monde, the world.
monstre, a monster; also a
 shew, a muster.
monter, to mount, get up.
morfondre, to take cold.
moresque, a Moore wo-
 man.
morne, sad, heavy, lumpish.
mortifere, mortiferous.
moûiller to wet.
moudre, to grinde.
mousquer, a Musket.
montée, an ascens.
mosquée, the Turks tem-
 ple.
mor, a word.
moufle, a mittaine.
mouchettes, snuffers.
moule, a mould.
mort, death.
moustache, a mustachoe.
moustarde, mustard.
mouvoir, to move.
moustele, a weefell.
moyenner, to be the meanes
 of, to effect.

moy-mesme, my selfe.
musle, the shout, murmur.
multiplier, to multiply.
murmure, murmur.
musc, muske.
muscles, muscles.
musicien, a Musitian.
mystere, a mysticte.
Nape, *nappe*, a table-cloth.
naistre, to be borne.
narrer, to declare.
navéau, a Navew roote.
navire, a shippe: *Nef*, a
 ship; body of a Church.
Il neige, it snoweth.
negoce, a businesse.
nepveu, a nephew.
net, cleane, neat.
nez, a nose.
nicher, to nestle.
niece, a Neece.
nier, to denie.
nid, a nest.
nettesse, cleannesse.
neuf, new: also nine.
niais, a nestling.
noircir, to blacke.
noix, a wall-nut.
nourrir, to nourish.
noirceur, blackenesse.
Nonnain, a Nunne.
noces, a marriage, wed-
 ding.
Novice, a Novice.
nourry, nourished.
nourrison, a nurse child.
nourrice,

nourrice, a nurse.
 nourricier, a foster-father.
 noter, to note, to make.
 nouveau, new.
 nombre, number.
 nud, nuë, naked.
 nuit, night.
 nuire, to hurt.
 Obelisque, an obeliske.
 Obliger, to oblige, bind.
 omettre, to omit.
 obstacle, an obstacle.
 S'obstiner, to be obstinate.
 obole, a halfe penie.
 obseques, funerall rites.
 obtenir, to obtaine.
 occasion, occasion.
 occasioner, to occasion.
 occuper, to occupy, busie.
 odieux, hatefull, odious.
 oeil, an eye.
 œuf, an egge.
 office, office, duty.
 offrir, an offer.
 offrir, to offer.
 oindre, to anoint.
 oignon, an onion.
 ongle, a naile, hoofe, clawe.
 opiner, to give his opinion.
 opinion, opinion.
 S'opiniastër, to be opini-
 onate.
 opprobre, a reproach.
 option, choice.
 oratoire, an oratorie.
 oraison, an oration, prayer.

ordinaire, ordinarie.
 oracle, an Oracle.
 ordonner, to ordaine.
 ordre, order.
 orge, barlie.
 Orient, the East.
 ofer, to dare.
 ostade, Worsted stuffe.
 ovale, an Ovall.
 ouvrir, to open.
 Paistre, to feed.
 Paix, peace.
 Palace, a Palace, the pa-
 late.
 palomb, a Ring-dove.
 pancher, to bend, or lean
 forwards.
 palle, pale, pale.
 paon, a Peacocke.
 panache, a plume of fea-
 ther.
 pareil, like, match.
 parricide, a parricide.
 part, a part.
 partir, to divide, to part.
 parterre, a floore, a plot.
 parcroistre, to ripen.
 parfaire, to performe.
 parvenir, to attaine unto.
 Pasque, Pasques, Easter.
 pasquil, a post in Rome,
 where libels are fixed.
 pastel, Woad.
 pastenades, Carots, Pars-
 neps.
 pastorelle, a shepherdesse.
 pastoureaux,

Pastoureau, a Pastour.
Paonner, to play the peacock.
pasté, a pie, a pasty,
pâsser, to passe.
passion, passion.
pasmoison, a swoone.
patient, patient.
patrimoine, a patrimome.
paume, *paulme*, the palme of the hand; a ball.
paure, poore.
Se Peiner, to take paines, to indeavour the utmost.
peine, paine, paines.
page, toll.
peageur, a tole-gatherer.
peau, the skin, hide.
peigne, a comb.
peser, to thinke, a thought.
pecore, a sheepe, scā.
Pedagogue, a Schoole-master. *Peindre*, to paint.
pendre, to hang.
pendant, a crack-fope.
paroy, a wall.
pendardeau, a little crack.
pensionistē, a pensioner.
pepon, a Pompion.
perplex, perplexed.
payement, payment.
peril, danger, perill.
persister, to persist.
Perle, a Pearle.
Se Perdre, to destroy himselfe.

Se permettre, to suffer himselfe.
permettre, to permit.
pecheur, a sinner.
pier, to pun, bray, stamp.
piller, to pill, poll, rife.
peser, to weigh.
peste, plague, pestilence.
pistole, a pestle.
pirie, pittie.
pied, a foot.
Philosophe, a Philosopher.
pestifere, pestiferous.
piece, a peece.
piasse, a bragging.
pipée, a fowlers chirping to deceive birds.
piege, a snare, grinne.
pinacle, a pinnacle.
Phantome, as *Fantasma*.
phlegme, fleame.
pinette, a kinde of Sider.
pipe, a bird-call.
pilote, a Pilote.
picque, a pike, a pike-man.
pincettes, Pincers.
plein, full.
pleurir, to plevin, war-rant.
Plomb, Lead.
playe, a wound.
plage, a strand, or flat shore.
pleige, a pledge, a surety.
plaire, to please.
plomber, to lead.

Plastre,

Plastre, a plaister.
 pluye, rain.
 point, a point, a pricke.
 poil, hair.
 Poëne, a Poeme.
 Il me Poise, it lies heavie
 on me.
 Il Pleure, it raineth.
 plusieurs, many.
 poix, pitch.
 Il Pert, it appeareth.
 poivre, pepper.
 politic, politicke.
 populace, the baser sort of
 people.
 populaire, the common
 people.
 pore, a pore.
 portail, a portall.
 porc, a hog, Porke.
 porquet, a Pig, a young
 porke.
 porreau, a Lecke, a wart.
 Portugaise, a Portague.
 portefaix, a Porter.
 postillon, a Postillion.
 postille, a postill.
 poste, a Poste.
 pousser, to thrust,
 push.
 pourchasser, to procure,
 purchase.
 poulitre, a Pulpit, deske.
 poupe, pulpe.
 possible, possible.
 ponce, the thumbe.

Pourtrair, to purtray.
 pourrir, to rot.
 pourvoir, to provide.
 pourpre, purple.
 poursuivre, to pursue.
 preparer, to prepare.
 predire, to foretell.
 prelude, a prelude.
 prendre, to take.
 precepte, a precept.
 pré, a meadow.
 precipice, a steepe down-
 fall.
 prepuce, the fore-skin.
 preambule, a preamble.
 presumption, presumption.
 prester, to lend.
 pleur, a tear.
 presser, to presse.
 prestation, a prest, alone.
 prestige, a delusion, deceit.
 prétexte, a pretence.
 prescrire, to prescribe.
 pretendre, to pretend.
 prevenir, to prevent.
 prier, to pray.
 Prieur, a Prior.
 Prestre, a Priest.
 Prince, a Prince.
 Priise, a taking. Priiser,
 idem.
 Privilege, a Priviledge.
 priser, to prize, esteeme.
 proche, neere, nigh.
 Procureur, a Procter.
 Procureur, a petty Proctor.
 prohiber,

- Prohiber**, to prohibite.
portée, the burthen of the wombe.
Prodige, a prodigy.
Prodigue, prodigall. **Pont-fendre**, to cleave through.
produire, to produce.
probat, a prooffe.
principe, a principle.
prison, a prison.
prix, price.
profiter, to profite.
Prologue, a Prologue.
projet, a project.
procez, a fute in Law.
promettre, to promise.
propos, a purpose, talke.
proscrire, to proscribe.
propre, proper, owne, fit.
prossere, prosperous.
Protecteur, a Protectour.
Profus, a publication by the Priest.
Protocole, copy of a deed.
provenir, to issue, come from, or spring of.
Proverbe, a Proverbe.
Il Provient, there proceeds.
Se Prouver, to be proved.
Psalm, **Pseume**, a Psalme.
prune, a plumme.
prunelle, the eye, ball.
prudent, prudent.
puceau, **pucelle**, a maid, virgin, maiden.
public, publicke.
Pudique, **Pudic**, chaste.
Pupille, a pupill, ward.
puce, a flea.
Pulpitre, as **Poulpitre**.
putain, a whore.
Rabar, a beater, falling-band.
Rable, a Plaisterer's beater.
rabaisser, to abate, abase.
raconter, to tell, relate.
rajeunir, to waxe young againe.
raison, reason.
raisort, a radish roote.
Raisin, a Grape, a Raisin.
ramentevair, to remember, to put in minde of.
rancir, to waxe mustie.
rang, a rank, row.
rançon, a ransome.
rare, rare.
ras, shaven: Serge stuffe.
rate, the spleene, milt.
ravaler, to pull downe.
reciter, to rehearse.
recevoir, to receive.
reboüillir, to boile againe.
raffeur, to setle, sit downe.
recheoir, to fall againe.
reclurre, to shut up close.
reconnoistre, to acknowledge.
recevoir, to receive.
reboucher, to blunt, to stop againe.
recevable, receivable.
rebelle,

rebelle, rebellious.
reculer, to recoile, goe
 backe.
recourir, to rescue, to have
 recourse unto.
recondre, to sow over a-
 gaine.
recuire, to seeth againe.
redire, to repeate, say a-
 gaine.
reduire, to reduce.
Se Ranger, to frame him-
 selfe to.
ravir, to ravish, snatch
 away. *Reel*, reall.
recueil, a collection, enter-
 tainment.
redenable, endebted, be-
 holden to.
refuser, to refuse.
refuir, to flee backe, flee
 from.
refondre, to melt againe.
refaire, to repaire, make
 againe.
refuge, a refuge.
regime, a regiment, rule.
regne, raigne.
Registre, a Register.
regarder, to behold, looke
 on.
Il Regne, there raigneth.
resjouyr, to rejoyce.
reiterer, to reiterate.
Reistre, a Reister, German
 horse-man.

Reluire, to shine.
Remarquer, to marke, ob-
 serve. *Remede*, a remedie.
renard, a Fox.
renom, renowne, fame.
repartir, to redivide, re-
 plie.
requerir, to require, re-
 quest.
rendre, to render, yeeld.
repandre, to hang up a-
 gaine.
renclore, to re-inclose.
remordre, to bite againe.
Il se Rencontre, there oc-
 cureth.
remuer, to stirre, move.
reneherir, to raise the price.
renforcer, to re-inforce.
repos, rest.
repaire, a lodge, a haunt.
repaisire, to feede, give
 food.
reperdre, to lose againe.
repandre, to take backe, to
 reprove.
rescrire, to write backe.
reservoir, to serve againe.
reserrer, to close, or shut
 up.
resssembler, to resemble.
Se Ressentir, to be sensible
 of.
resandre, to shed, to spill.
respondre, to answer.
Il Reste, it remaineth.

Restrecir,

restrecir, to straiten, re-
 straine.
restreindre, to restrain.
respit, a respite, delay.
restabliſſir, to re-establiſh,
reſveil, a huntsup, wake-
 ning.
reſveiller, to awake.
reſver, to rave, dote, speake
 idly.
reſuerie, raving, dotage.
rats, a net.
retenir, to retaine.
retarder, to hinder.
retordre, to writhe.
retourner, to returne.
revenir, to come againe.
revestir, to reinvest.
revivre, to revive, live a-
 gaine.
reverdir, to waxe greene
 againe.
reunir, to reunite.
Reverendissime, most Re-
 verend.
riche, rich.
risque, perill, danger.
ride, a wrinkle.
ris, laughter.
roidir, to stiffen, be stiffe.
roſtir, to roste.
rompre, to breake.
Se Rompre, to be broken.
roide, stiffe.
round, round.

Roine, a Queene.
roke, a gowne.
Roole, *Roule*, a roule.
rouge, red.
rouget, somewhat red.
roux, redish.
rouſſir, to make red, wax
 red.
rougir, to blush.
rouë, a wheele.
rouëlle, a little wheele.
Roy, a King.
Royaume, a Kingdome.
ruë, a street.
ruelle, a lane.
rude, rude, rough.
ruble, sixe hundred pound
 weight.
ruse, subtiltie, a wile.
rustaud, a clowne.
Rustic, *Rustique*, rusticke,
 clownish.
Rustre, a Roister, Ruffin.
Quadruble, *Quatuple*,
 foure fold, foure double.
Quaresme, Lent.
Quarre, a square.
Quantiesme, of what
 number.
Quatrain, a staffe of foure
 verses.
Question, a question.
Queuë, a taile.
Sable, sand, sable colour.
sac, a sacke.
sage, wise.

saillir,

saillir, to issue forth, to
leape.

salair, a salarie, wages,
hire.

saigner, to bleed, to let
blood.

sale, foule, filthy.

salubre, wholesome.

saluer, to salute.

salut, health, safety, salva-
tion.

salir, to salt, to defile.

sang, blood.

sangle, a girth.

sacbet, a little sacke.

santé, health.

saoul, full, glutted.

satisfaire, to satisfie.

saillie, a sallie, issue, a
leape.

sauce, sawce.

Sacrifice, Sacrifice.

sauge, sage hearbe.

savatte, an old shoe.

Sauveur, a Saviour.

savourer, to savour.

saye, a hide coate, a cas-
locke.

sçavant, skilfull, learned.

sçie, a saw.

scrupule, a scruple.

Sceptre, a Scepter.

Science, Science, know-
ledge.

sec, drie.

secourir, to succour.

Seditieux, seditious.

Seduire, the seduce.

Seel, a seale.

Seigle, Rie corne.

Semains, a Weeke.

Sepulchre, a Sepulchre.

Sel, salt.

seicher, to drie.

semer, to sowe seed.

Il se Seme, there is sowed,
or spread abroad.

Septentrion, the North.

fenestre, sinister, left.

Sequestre, he into whose
hands a thing is seque-
stred.

sembler, to seeme.

Il sert, it serveth.

Il Semble, it seemeth.

Serenissime, most famous,
a title given to Prince.

Sergeant, a Sergeant.

Sergenteau, *Sergentelet*, a
petty Sergeant.

semondre, to summon.

servil, servile.

serviteur, a servant.

severe, severe.

seul, alone. *Seur*, sure.

service, service.

signe, a signe, token.

signifier, to signifie.

sinistre, sinister.

sitrops, sitrops.

simple, simple, single.

silence, silence.

Singe,

Singe, an Ape.
Siecle, an age.
Sire, Sir, a title given to the King.
Il Sied, it becommeth.
soif, thirst.
sonde, a plummet to sound with.
songe, a dreame.
sommaire, a summarie.
soing, soine, care.
Soleil, the Sunne.
soigner, to care.
sommeil, sleepe.
solide, solide.
sobre, sober.
sombre, close, darke, clowdie.
sophiste, a sophister.
soliciter, to sollicite.
sanner, to sound.
sortir, to issue forth, come forth.
sortie, an issue, or going forth.
songeard, a dreamer.
sœur, a sister.
lot, a lot, a foole.
soucy, care.
soucier, to afflict with care.
Se soucier, to care for.
souës, sweet.
souffrir, to suffer.
soufle, breath, a blast.
soufre, souphre, brimstone, sulphure.

Soulier, a shoe.
souple, supple, pliant.
souçon, suspicion.
souhaiter, to wish.
souçonner, to suspect.
source, a Spring.
souris, a Mouse.
Il Sourd, there ariseth.
suscrire, to subscribe.
soustraire, to subtract, or to withdraw.
Se Souvenir, to remember.
Il Souvient, hee remembers.
soustenir, to sustaine, or uphold.
subject, subject, a subject.
submitre, to submit.
subside, helpe, a subside.
substance, substance.
subit, sudden.
sublime, sublime, high.
subril, subtile.
subvenir, to helpe, succour.
subvertir, to subvert.
succer, to sucke.
succer, successe.
sterile, barren.
spectacle, a spectacle.
style, a style in writing.
suaire, a linnen cloth.
sucre, sugar.
soy-mesme, himselfe.
suader, to perswade.
Il Souffit, it sufficeth.

Suër, to sweate.
sueil, a threshold.
superbe, proud, stately.
surcroistre, to overgrow.
sursoir, to surcease.
surfaillir, to leape on, to start.
surfaire, to overprise.
surprendre, to surprise.
survenir, to happen.
Il Survient, there happeneth.
survaincre, to overcome.
survivre, to survive.
suspect, suspected.
suspendre, to suspend.
syllabe, a syllable.
Symbole, a badge, the Creed.
syncere, sincere.
synonyme, a synonyma.
Table, a Table.
Tabernacle, a Tabernacle.
tançon, a chiding.
tare, losse, unwares, tart, salt.
taon, a brize, a gadflie.
Targe, a Target.
Il me tarde, I thinke long.
Tarir, to drie up.
tasche, a taske.
tascher, to endeavour.
taster, to taste, feele, grope.
taxer, to taxe, rebuke.

Tenailles, pincers, tongs.
tendre, tender.
Tenir la main, to have a hand in.
temeraire, rash.
territoire, a Territorie.
tertre, a hillock.
terme, a terme.
terne, a Tray.
temps, time.
terre, earth, ground, land.
teste, a head.
tempeste, a tempest.
tempestif, seasonable.
tester, to make a Will.
Testament, a Testament, Will.
teston, a boxe with the fist, a testoon.
testonner, to curle haire.
tete, a teat, dug.
texte, a text.
tres-juste, most just.
tres chaste, most chaste.
Il tient d, it is long of.
timbre, the crest of an helmet, a colledge bell.
tine, a stand, or tub.
tiltre, a title.
theatre, a theater.
Throsne, a Throne.
Tigre, a Tigre.
tolerer, to tolerate.
Tome, a Tome.
Tonnerre, Thunder.
tonne, a tunne.

M

Tonnelle,

Tonnelle, a tunnell; arbor.
tomber, to fall.
tondre, to sheare, clip.
Il tonne, it thundreth.
Il tombe, there falleth.
tordre, to wreath, to writhe.
torchet, to wipe.
tourney, a Turney.
toux, a cough.
travail, travell, labour.
trahison, treason.
trait, a dart, shaft, shot.
traicter, to treate, intreat.
trahir, to betray.
travailler, to labour.
transcrire, to copie out.
traduire, to translate.
Il se traite, therē is handled.
trainer, to traile, drag.
toy-mesme, thy selfe.
treffaillir, to start.
trembler, to tremble.
tremper, to dip, moisen.
trenche-plume, a pen-knife.
tristrac, the game, Tick-tack.
triste, sad, sorrowfull.
triple, threefold, triple.
triomphe, a triumph.
tribu, a tribe.
trophée, a trophic.
trouble, trouble.
trou, a hole.
trouver, to finde.

tuër, to kill.
tumulte, a tumult.
Tuteur, a Tutor.
Il se trouve, there is found.
Vacher, a Cowheard.
Vase, a Vessel.
Se vanter, to vaunt, brag.
Il vaut, it is worth.
vendre, to sell.
veiller, to wake, to watch.
velu, hairie.
vendange, vintage.
ventre, the bellic.
venaison, venison.
venter, the winde to blow.
venue, a comming.
verdir, to wax greene.
verme, a worme.
vermisseau, a little worm.
verre, a glasse.
vertu, vertue.
verité, truth.
vertueux, vertuous.
vermil, vermilion.
verbe, a verbe.
verrouil, a bolt for a dore.
Vestiaire, a Vestrie.
vestige, a step, footstep.
vestir, to clothe.
veüe, a sight, the sight.
vieille, an old woman, old.
vielle, a crowd, a fiddle.
vieil, old.
veuf, a widower.
veufue, a widow.
vice, vice.

Vespre,

Vespre, the evening.

Vieillir, to waxe old.

Il vient à bien, it succedeth well, or *mal*, ill.

Il vient à point, or *à propos*, it comes fitly, to purpose, or in good season.

Vif, *vive*, lively, alive, quicke.

vigne, a vine.

vil, vile, base.

ville, a city, a walled town.

vinaigre, vinegar.

vingt, twenty.

viril, manly.

viste, quick, swift.

vistempenard, a duster made of a Fox taile.

vitupere, blame, dispraise.

Ulcers, an ulcer.

Voisin, a neighbour, also neighbouring unto.

Vomir, to vomit.

Volume, a Volume.

Il se void, there is scene.

Voix, a voice.

voüer, to vow.

vouge, a hunting staffe, a boare speare.

vouloir, to will.

voye, a way; also a course.

vray, true.

util, profitable.

uide, emptie, voide.

vulgaire, vulgar, common.

Yeulx, the eyes.

Yver, winter.

Yvre, drunken.

Yvrogne, a drunkard.

Zeie, zeale.

FINIS.

M 2



Dialogue Premier.

De plusieurs propos &
devis familiers, par
chemin, &c.

Henry. *Bon jour mon-*
sieur Philippes.

Philp. *Ha ! Dieu*
vous gard Monsieur Henry,
vous soyez le bien venu.

Hen. *Hastez vous Mon-*
sieur je vous prie, car ces
Messieurs qui nous doivent
accompagner sont deja prests.

Phil. *Garçon, apporte icy*
mes bottes & mes esperons;
Je seray tantost prest.

Hen. *Vous voila mainte-*
nant botté & esperonné.

Phil. *Les chevaux ont*
ils bien mangé ?

Le Serviteur. *Je leur ay*
donné leur ratelier plein de
foin, & leur mangeoire
pleine d'avoine, maintenant
il n'y a pas un poil de foin,
ny grain d'avoine.

Phil. *Fay-les seller &*
brider ; je monteray mon
alexan bruslé ; mettez-y

The First Dialogue.

Of many speeches and fa-
miliar talke by the
way, &c.

Henry. *God morrow*
master Philip.

Philp. *O ! God*
save you master Henry, you
are welcome.

Henry. *Make haste Sir, I*
pray you, for these Gentle-
men that are to goe with
us, are ready already.

Phil. *Boy, bring me my*
bootes, and my spurs; I will
be ready presently.

Hen. *So, now you are*
booted and spurred.

Phil. *Have the horses*
eaten well ?

Servant. *I gave them*
their racke full of hay, and
their manger full of oates,
and now there is not one
jott. of hay, nor one graine
of oates left.

Phil. *Let them bee sad-*
dled and bridled, I will
ride upon my burnt-forell,

une housse; Monsieur Henry montera le gris pommelé. Et ces autres Messieurs, comment sont-ils équippez ?

Hen. Monsieur le Docteur chevauche une belle hacquenée, Monsieur Samuel un cheval de louage, bien maigre, & Monsieur Missippe va dedans un charriot.

Phil Et quant à nos serviteurs, ils nous suivront à pied.

Le Serv. Messieurs tout est prest.

Phil. ça montons.

Hen. Allons; Quelle heure pensez-vous que ce soit ?

Phil. Je cognois au Soleil qu'il est passé huit heures.

Hen. Dieu vous gard Messieurs, & toute la compagnie.

Le Docteur. Et vous aussi, Monsieur Henry.

Phil. Bonne vie & longue Monsieur le Docteur, & à toute vostre compagnie, nous sommes très-marris vous faire tant attendre.

Samuel. Vous ne nous faites point trop attendre,

put a foot-cloth on him: M. Henry shall ride the dapple gray. And those other Gentlemen, how are they furnished ?

Henry. Master Doctor rides upon a faire ambling horse, Master Samuel a hired horse very leane, and master Missippus goes in a Waggon.

Phil. And as for our men, they shall follow us on foot.

Serv. Gentlemen, all is ready. Phil. Come let us take horse.

Hen. Let us goe; What doe you think it is a clocke ?

Philip. I know by the Sunne it is past eight a clocke.

Henry. God save you Gentlemen, and all the company.

Doctor. And you also, master Henry.

Philip. God give you good morrow master Doctor, and all your company; wee are very sorry wee make you tarrie so long.

Sam. You make us not tarrie over long, Sir wee

nous ne faisons que monter à cheval, vous venez tout à point.

Phil. Monsieur Henry, maniez ce cheval un peu doucement, car il est un peu chatoüilleux à la pointe, & est pour mettre son homme par terre.

Samuel. O que voicy un cheval qui secouë bien son homme, il me cassera tous les os.

Hen. Quelle selle avez-vous là ? je pense que c'est un bast.

Sam. Il ne s'en faut gueres ; car il n'y a point de poitrail, & la croupiere estoit descousüe, mais je l'ay raccoustrée avec une esguillette.

Hen. Deçà Messieurs, deçà, tournons à gauche, afin d'éviter ceste fange, & tenons ce petit sentier, qui est plaisant & aisé.

Phil. Non, non il n'y a rien meilleur, ny plus seur que le grand chemin : car nous perdrons nostre compagnie par ces chemins esgarez, principalement parce que ce chemin (si bien je m'en souviens) est fort tortu & mal aisé à tenir.

are but new got on horse-backe, you come in very good time.

Phil. Master Henry, manage that horse somewhat gently, for hee is a little quicke on the spurre, and will doe his best to cast his rider.

Samuel. O that here is a horse shakes a man vildlie, he will breake all my bones.

Hen. What a saddle have you there ? I thinke it is a pack-saddle.

Samuel. It is but little better ; for there is no pètrell, and the crupper was unfowed, but I have mended it with a point.

Hen. This way, Gentlemen, let us turn on the left hand, to shunne that dirt, and let us keepe this path, which is pleasant & easie.

Phil. No, no, there is nothing better, nor safer, than to keepe the common road-way : for in these by-ways wee may lose our companie, especially seeing this way (if I remember well) is very crooked and hard to keepe.

Sam.

Sam. Voicy un cheval qui bronche à chasque pas, il choperoit à un festu. Monsieur le Docteur, arrestez un peu, jusques à ce que le Mareschal aye ferré vostre haquenée, qui a perdu le fer du pied droit.

Doct. Mon amy, ferrez bien mon cheval : combien y-a-il d'icy à Londres ?

Le Mareschal. Sept lieues & demie, ou quinze milles.

Doct. Quel chemin faut-il tenir ?

Le Mareschal. Suivez tousjours le grand chemin sans vous fourvoyer ny à dextre, ny à senestre.

Doct. Ça, amenez-moy mon cheval : combien vous doy-je maintenant ?

Le Mareschal. Cinq sols.

Doct. Les voilà. Allons Messieurs.

Phil. Je pense que nous sommes fourvoyez.

Doct. Mon amy, où est le plus court chemin d'icy à Londres ?

Sam. Il ne vous entend point, il est sourd.

Henry. Ho, bon-homme, par où va-on à Londres ?

Sam. Here is a horse that stumbleth at every steppe, he would stumble at a straw. Master Doctor, stay a little, till the Smith have shodde your ambling nag, which hath lost his right-foot shooe.

Doct. Friend, shode my horse well : how farre is it hence to London ?

The Smith. Seven leagues and a halfe, or fiftene miles.

Doct. Which way must we keepe ?

The Smith. Follow still the broad high-way, without swarving to the right hand, or to the left.

Doct. Come, bring me my horse : how much doe I owe you now ?

The Smith. Five souz, (that is, sixpence, English.)

Doct. There it is. Let us goe Gentlemen.

Phil. I thinke wee are out of our way.

Doct. Friend, which is the nearest way from hence to London ?

Sam. He heares you not, he is deafe.

Henry. Ho, honest-man, which way go we to London ?

Le Paisan. Par icy Messieurs, vous avez failly : destournez vos chevaux, à ces deux chemins, & suivez celui du long de la riviere, il vous menera tout droit sans faillir, & n'en y a point d'autre jusques à un vieil chesne, de là tournez vous tout court à ceste main.

Hen. Nous vous remercions.

Le Pais. Dieu vous conduise.

Phil. Nous voicy pres de la ville.

Henry. Nous sommes arrivez bien à temps : Où logez-vous Monsieur le Docteur ?

Doct. Au cigne noir en la rue d'holbourn.

Phil. Et nous pareillement, car c'est une hostellerie, où l'on est fort bien traicté.

Sam. Par icy Messieurs, où allez-vous ?

Phil. Il est vray, c'est le plus court chemin.

L'hoste Vous estes les bien venus Messieurs, & toute l'honorable cōpagnie.

Doct. Grand mercy mon hoste.

Countriman. This way Gentlemen, you have failed : turne your horses to these two wayes, & follow that which is along the river, it will bring you straight on without failing, & there is no other way till you come to an old oake there turne suddenly on this hand.

Henry. Wee thanke you.

Countr. God bee your guide.

Phil. Now wee draw neere to the City.

Henry. Wee are come in good time : where doe you lodge Master Doctour ?

Doct. At the black swan in Holborne.

Philip. And wee likewise, for it is an Inne where men are very well used.

Sam. This way Gentleman, whither goe you ?

Phil. It is true, this is the neerer way.

The Inne-keeper. You are welcome Gentlemen, and all your good company.

Doct. Grammercie mine hoste.

Phil.

Phil. Où est le Palefrenier ?

L'hoste. Appellaz-le.

Doct. Tenez mon cheval promenez-le, mais ne le dessellez point encores.

Phil. Menez-les boire & faites-leur bonne litiere.

Le Palefrenier. N'en ayez pas peur Messieurs, je les penseray bien.

Henry. Escoutez ? donnez leur de bon foin, & de bonne avoine.

Le Palefr. Ils n'auront faute de rien.

Phil. Chambellan, montrez-nous nos chambres.

Doct. Où est nostre hofesse ?

Hen. Mon hofesse qu'avons-nous à souper ?

L'Hostesse. Descendez en la cuisine s'il vous plaist, pour y voir.

Samuel. Laissez m'en la charge Messieurs, j'y pourvoiray.

Phil. Et bien, Monsieur Henry, vous & moy irons nous promener en la ville, en attendant que le souper s'appreste.

Hen. Je le veux de bon cœur : car aussi bien me faut-

Phil. Where is the Ostler ?

Host. Call him.

Doct. Hold my horse, walke him, but doe not unsaddle him yet.

Philip. Lead them to water, and make them good litter.

The Ostler. Feare yee not Gentlemen, I will dresse them well.

Hen. Do you heare ? give them good hay, and good oates.

The Ostler. They shall want nothing.

Philip. Chamberlaine, shew us our chambers.

Doct. Where is our hofesse ?

Hen. Hofesse, what have we to supper ?

Hostes. Come downe into the kitchin Sir, I pray you, and see.

Sam. Gentlemen, leave the charge of that to me, I will provide for it.

Philip. Well Master Henry, you and I will goe walke into the City, whilest supper is making ready.

Hen. With all my heart Sir : for I must buy many

il acheter plusieurs choses dont j'ay besoing.

Phil. Allons donc.

La Lingere. Messieurs, que vous plaist-il ? voudriez-vous aucunes belles toilles ? vous plaist-il acheter de chemises, de fraises, de rabats, de mouchoirs, de bonnets de nuit, de chausses à botter, de chaufsons, ou quelque autre chose que nous ayons ?

Phil. Entrons en ceste boutique.

Le Mercier. Que vous plaist-il voir Monsieur ?

Ph. Mōstrez moy du meilleur Satin que vous ayez.

Le Mer. De quelle couleur vous en plaist-il ? De quelle couleur en demandez vous ? de noir, de blanc, de verd, de rouge, de jaune, de bleu, de bleu celeste, de pourpre, cendré, orangé, violet, changeant ? &c.

Phil. J'en veux voir de noir.

Le Mer. Voila une piece du meilleur satin qui soit dans ceste Ville, il est plain de soye, & la couleur en est belle.

Phil. N'est-il point gommé ? que faites vous l'aune

things too that I have need of.

Phil. Let us goe then.

The Seamster. What lacke yec Gentlemen ? would you have any good linnen cloth ? will it please you buy some shirts, ruffe bands, falling bands, handkerchers, night-caps, boot-hose, socks, or any thing else that we have ?

Phil. Let us go into this shop.

The Mercer. What will you please to see Sir ?

Philip. Shew mee the best Satin that you have.

The Merc. Of what colour wil it please you have it ? What colour doe you demand ? black, white, greene, red, yellow, blew, watchet, purple, alh-color, orange-colour, violet, changeable ? &c.

Phil. I would see some blacke.

The Mercer. There is a piece of the best satin, that is in this Citie, it is full of silke, and the colour of it is faire.

Phil. Is it not gummed ? how sell you the ell
de

de es satin ? ne me le sur-
faites pas, & j'en prendray
dix aulnes.

Le Mercier. Ne voulez-
vous qu'un mot ? vous
en payerez dixsept schelins
l'aulne.

Phil. C'est trop, vous
estes trop cher.

Le Merc. Combien vous
en plaist-il bailler ?

Phil. Je vous en baille-
ray sept francs, ce sont, qua-
torz schelins.

Le Merc. Il me revient
à plus que vous ne m'of-
frez : je ne le scauroye
vendre à tel prix, j'y per-
drois.

Phil. Vous plaist-il me le
donner ? Je vous en baille-
ray dix sols ; ou un schelin
davantage.

Le Merc. C'est trop peu
certes, il m'en couste d'a-
vantage : prenez-le pour
seize schelins.

Phil. Je n'en donneray
non plus, regardez si vous
le voulez.

Hen. Avez-vous de bon
drap d'or ?

Le Merc. Oüy Monsieur,
d'aussi bon qu'il s'en peut
trouver.

Henry. Que je voye :

of this satin ? do not over-
prise it unto me, & I will
taken ten ells of it.

The Merc. Will you have
but one word ? you shall
pay for it seventeen shil-
lings the ell.

Phil. It is too deare, you
are too deare.

The Mer. What will it
please you to give ?

Phil. I will give you for
it seven franks ; that is,
fourteen shillings.

The Mer. It stands me
in more than you offer me:
I cannot sell it for that
price, I should lose by
it.

Philip. Shall I have it ?
I will give you tenne
souz, or one shilling
more.

The Mer. It is too little
truely ; it cost mee more:
take it for sixteene shil-
lings.

Philip. I will give no
more, see if you will take
it.

Hen. Have you any good
cloth of gold ?

The Mercer. Yes Sir,
as good as any can bee
found.

Henry. Let mee see it,
monstrez

monstrez m'en de meilleur,
si vous en avez.

Le Mer. Vous n'en scau-
riez trouver de meilleur.

Hen. Combien vendez-
vous la verge de cestuy-là?

Le Mer. Vous n'en paye-
rez que cinq escus, ou quin-
ze francs, ou trente sche-
lins la verge.

Hen. Je ne veux point de
cestuy-là : combien vendez
vous l'aulne de cestuy-cy ?

Phil. Je ne bailleray pas
une espingle d'avantage que
sept francs & quinze sols,
ce sont quinze schelins &
demy, choisissez si vous
voulez prendre mon ar-
gent, ou non : ne me chas-
sez point ailleurs, vous
n'en aurez pas un denier
plus de moy, car j'en ay
desja trop offert.

Le Mer. Il me fait mal
de vous esconduire, encores
que je n'y gaigne rien : vous
l'aurez en esperance que
vous achepierez de nous,
quand vous en aurez be-
soin. Or sus, combien vous
en plaist-il ? combien vous
en plaist-il d'aulnes ?

Phil. Sept aulnes & de-
mie, & demy quartier.

Le Mer. Le tout revient

shew me some better, if
you have any.

The Mer. You can finde
no better Sir.

Hen. How sell you that
same the yard ?

The Mer. You shall pay
me for it but five crowns,
or 15. frankes, or 30. shil-
lings, the yard.

Hen. I will none of that,
how sell you the yarde of
this ?

Phil. I will not give a
pin more then seven frankes
and fiftene souz, that is,
fiftene shillings and six
pence, choose you whether
you will take my money,
or no : Doe not drive me
to another place, you shall
not have ong pennie more
of me, for I have offred too
much already.

The Mer. I am loth to
denie you, though I get
nothing by it : you shall
have it, in hope you will
buy of us when you shall
have need. Go to, how
much will it please you to
have? how many ells would
you have ?

Phil. Seven ells and an
halfe, and halfe a quarter.

The Merc. That com-
s cinq

à cinq livres dixhuit ſche-
lins, deux deniers, & un
ſardin, ou le quart d'un
denier ſterlin; ou en mon-
noye de France, à cinquante
neuf livres, un ſol, dix de-
niers & maille.

Phil. Bien, meſurez-le,
& faites bonne meſure.
Tenez, voila voſtre argent,
contez-le.

Le Mer. Je vous prie,
changer moy ceſte piece
d'or, qui n'eſt pas de poids,
elle eſt legere de ſix grains.

Philip. En voila d'au-
tres, prenez-en voſtre
choix, puis rendez-moy mon
reſte.

Le Mer. Je les veux pe-
ſer: je prendray ceſte-cy,
voila voſtre reſte.

Phil. Et bien eſtes vous
content? eſtes vous payé?

Le Mer. Oüy Monſieur,
je vous remercie tres-hum-
blement: croyez que vous
avez bien fait voſtre em-
ploite. Ne vous faut-il point
de veloux, de veloux à ra-
mage, de taſſetas, de taſſe-
tas velouté? vous laiſt-il
point acheter de damas, de
camelot ondoyé, ou ſans on-
de, de fuſtaine de Milan? &c.

meth all to five pounds,
cighteene ſhillings, two
pence farthing ſterling,
or in French money to
fifty nine livres, one ſouz,
tenne deniers and halfe
penny.

Phil. Well, measure it,
and make good measure.
Hold, there is your money,
tell it.

The Mercer. I pray you
change me this peece of
gold, which is not weight,
it wanteth ſixe graines.

Phil. There be others,
take your choice of them,
and then give me the reſt
again.

The Mer. I will weigh
them: I will take this ſame,
there is your reſt.

Phil. Well, are you con-
tented? are you paid?

The Mer. Yes ſir, I moſt
humbly thanke you: be-
leeve me you have beſtow-
ed your money well. Want
you not velvet, bran-
ched velvet, taſſeta, tuſt-
taſſeta? will it pleaſe
you buy any damaske,
chamlet watered or un-
watered, Millan ſuſtian?
&c.

Phil.

Phil. Non pas pour ceste fois.

Le Merc. N'espargnez chose qui soit ceans: tout est à vostre commandement.

Phil. Je vous remercie. Adieu Monsieur.

Le Merc. Dieu vous doint bonne vie & longue Mes- sieurs.

L'Orfevre. Messieurs, vous plaist-il acheter des bagues? voudriez-vous voir une belle chaine d'or, un beau carcan, des grosses perles Orientales, un bon Diamant, une belle Esme- vaulde, ou quelques autres pierreries?

Phil. Allons maintenant chez le Drapier.

Le Drapier. Que de- mandez-vous Messieurs? Ne vous faut-il point de bon carizé, de la frisée, de drap, de bonne escarlate?

Phil. Que je voye une bonne piece de drap.

Hen. J'iray ce pendant en ceste autre bontique pour acheter de la soye, du pas- sement d'or & d'argent, des rubens de soye, & des esguillettes.

Phil. Comme il vous plaira.

Phil. No, not at this time.

The Mer. Spare nothing that we have, all is at your command.

Phil. I thanke you. Fare you well sir.

The Mercer. God bee with you Gentlemen.

The Gold-smith. Gentle- men, will it please you buy any rings, or jewels? will you see a faire chaine of gold, a faire carkanet, great Orientall pearles, a good Diamond, a faire Eme- ralde, or any other pre- cious stones?

Phil. Let us goe now to the Drapers.

The Draper. What lacke yee Gentlemen? Want you no good ker- sic, bayes, cloth, good Skarlet?

Phil. Let mee see a good peccc of cloth.

Hen. I will goe in the meane time into this other shop for to buy some filke, some gold and silver lace, filke rebands, and some points.

Phil. As you please Sir.

Hen.

Hen. Et bien, avez
acheté tout ce qu'il vous
faut ?

Phil. Nenny pas encore :
Il me faut avoir un chapeau,
une ceinture, de bas d'esta-
me, de bas de soye, une paire
de gands, & de pendants
d'espée.

Hen. Remettez-le à une
autre fois : car je voy qu'il
est tard.

Phil. Allons donc, re-
tournons nous en.

Hen. ça mon amy, ostez
mes espérons, & tirez mes
bottes.

Phil. Où est mon servi-
teur ?

Le Serviteur. Me voisy
Monsieur, Que vous plaist-
il ?

Phil. Allez-moy querir
le tailleur, afin qu'il prenne
ces estoffes pour m'en faire
un manteau, un pourpoint,
& un haut-dechaussés.

Hen. Et dites au cor-
donnier, qui demeure au
bout de la rue, qu'il m'ap-
porte une paire de bottes
de marroquin blanc, & une
paire de souliers de marro-
quin noir.

Phil. Qu'il m'apporte
aussi des mules, des escar-

Henry. Well, have
you bought all that you
need ?

Phil. No, not yet: I
must have a hat, a girdle,
a paire of worsted stock-
ings, a paire of silke stock-
ings, a paire of gloves, and
sword-hangers.

Hen. Put it off till ano-
ther time; for I see it is
late.

Phil. Let us goe then,
let us returne.

Hen. Here friend, come
take off my spurs, and pull
off my bootes.

Phil. Where is my
man ?

Servant. Here Sir, what
is your pleasure ?

Phil. Goe fetch me the
Taylor, that he may take
away these stufes for to
make me a cloak, adoublet,
and a paire of breeches.

Hen. And bid the shooc-
maker, that dwels at the
streets end, bring mee a
paire of white Spanish-
leather bootes, and a
paire of blacke Spanish-
leather shoes.

Phil. Let him bring
me also some pantoffles,
pins,

pins, & des pantoufles.

Le Serv. Bien Monsieur j'y vay.

L'Hoste. Messieurs la viande se gaste, & la compagnie vous attend, vous plaist-il venir souper?

Phil. Tres-volontiers mon hôte.

Doct. ça Messieurs, lavons.

Phil. Versez à la ronde.

L'Hoste. Seez vous Messieurs, Monsieur le Docteur, prenez s'il vous plaist ce haut bout.

Hen. Monsieur Philippes mettez-vous : je m'assieray de l'autre costé.

Docteur. Benissons la Table : Pere celeste, &c.

Phil. Monsieur Samuel, vous plaist-il de ce gigot de mouton?

L'Hoste. Osez ce boüilly, & approchez ces lapins, ce chapon rosty, & ces becasses.

Phil. Mon hôte, descoupez s'il vous plaist ce chapon-là.

L'hôte. Je boiray un coup avant que l'entamer : Je saluë vos bonnes graces Monsieur le Docteur, &

pumps, and slippers.

Servant, Well Sir, I goe.

The Hoste. Gentlemen the meat marreth, and the cōpany staves for you, will it please you come to supper?

Phil. Very willingly mine host.

Doct. Come Gentlemen, let us wash.

Phil. Poure round.

The hôte. Sit ye downe Gentlemen : Master Doctor, take I pray you this upper end.

Hen. Sit downe Master Philip : I will sit on the other side.

Doct. Let us blesse the boord : O heavenly Father, &c.

Phil. Master Samuel, will you have any of this leg of mutton?

The host. Take away this boild meate, and set neerer those rabbits, that roasted capon, & those Woodcocks.

Philip. Mine hôte, cut up that capon I pray you.

The host. I will drinke once before I cut it up : I drinke to you Master Docteur, and to all the celles

celles de tout la compagnie.

Doct. Dieu le vous benisse mon hôte.

L'Hôte. Messieurs, je vous supplie faire bonne chere & estre joyeux.

Phil. Monsieur, vous plaist il l'aïste ou la cuiſſe ? vous serviray-je Monsieur ?

Sam. Je vous baise la main, monsieur.

L'Hôte. Messieurs, je ne vous donne rien, vous en prendrez là où il vous plaira.

Doct. Chascun cherchera ses appetits : celui à qui on donne ne choisit pas. Versez-moy à boire en ce verre ; il me faut boire à Monsieur Philippes, & à Monsieur Henry.

Le Serv. Duquel vous plaist-il Monsieur ?

Doct. Du claret.

Le Serv. En voila Monsieur.

Doct. Or-ça Messieurs, à vostre santé.

Phil. Prouface Monsieur le Docteur.

Hen. Monsieur je vous baise les mains, je vous plegieray icy.

L'hôte. Or ça enfans, offrez ces viandes, & at-

good companie.

Doct. Much good may it do you mine host.

The Host. Gentlemen, I pray you cate and bee merrie.

Phil. Sir, will it please you have the wing or the leg ? shall I help you Sir ?

Sam. I kisse your hand, Sir.

The Host. Gentlemen, I doe not carve to you, you shall take where you please.

Doct. Let every one take what likes his appetite best : he that hath it given him, chooseth not. Fill me some drinke in that glasse: I must drinke to Master Philip, & to master Henry.

Serv. Which will you please to drinke of Sir ?

Doct. Some claret wine.

Serv. There is some sir.

Doct. Here Gentlemen, to your good health.

Phil. Much good doe it you master Doctor.

Henry. Sir I thanke you, I will pledge you here.

The host. Come fe'lowes, take away these meats, and

N

portez

portez le desert.

Hen. Monsieur nostre hôte, où est nostre hôteſſe, qu'elle ne nous vient tenir compagnie?

L'Hôte. Vous l'excusez pour ce ſoir ſ'il vous plaist, demain elle recompensera le tort qu'elle vous auroit fait par ſon abſence.

Doct. Qu'on oſte la table, & rendons graces à Dieu: Nous te rendons graces Dieu tres-benin, &c.

bring us the fruit.

Hen. Mine hoſt, where is our hoſteſſe, that ſhee came not to beare us companie?

The Hoſt. I pray you excuse her for this night, to morrow ſhee ſhall recompence the wrong ſhe hath done you now by her abſence.

Doct. Take away the table, and let us give God thanks. Wee give thee thanks moſt gracious God, &c.

Dialogue



Dialogue Deuxiesme.

Des exercices de la
Noblesse.

DU Sens. Il faut que les exercices, auxquels on dresse une noble jeunesse, ayent deux fins, à sçavoir pour la rendre capable de servir au public, puis pour s'en sçavoir prevaloir elle mesme, tant pour l'esgard de la recreation de l'esprit, que pour la santé, & agilité du corps. Et le premier exercice, auquel j'estime qu'un Gentil-homme se doit adonner, c'est à danser.

Loüis. Je le desirerois tout jeune, car ces grands corps, qui sont à l'age de vingt ans, sont si roides & lourds, qu'à grand peine le sçaura-on dresser : mais si de bonne heure il y met son estude, & prendra telle habitude de bien porter son corps qu'il trouvera puis apres un mouvement de ses membres plus gay, leger, & libre.

The second Dialogue.

Of the exercises of Nobilitie and Gentry.

M^{r. Wit.} The exercises, in which the yong Nobility are trained, must have these two ends; namely, to make them capable for employment in the cōmon-weale, and also to be able to make use of them themselves, as well for regard of the recreation of the minde, as for the health and agility of the body. And the first exercise, which I thinke a Gentleman ought to give himselfe unto, is dancing.

Lewis. I would have him begin yong, for these great bodies, which are about twenty, are so stiffe, and unweldy, that they can very hardly bee framed to it : but if betimes he apply himselfe to it, he will take such a habitude of comely carriage of his body, that he will afterwards finde a more lively, light, & free moving of his members.

Le Grave. Je trouve cet exercice trop ridicule ; & croy qu'il a esté inventé par des yvrongnes , lesquels eschauffez de la fumée du vin , estoient esguillonnez à tels goffes & impertinents sauts & mouvemens.

Du Sens. L'abus ne doit pourtant oster l'usage des choses ; quand le Gentil-homme apprend de jeunesse à bien porter ses membres, il est puis apres plus adroit au maniement d'une espée, & port des armes ; & toutesfois ne desire-je que le Gentil-homme soit par trop ambitieux de sçavoir si à fonds la science des pieds de son maistre, mais bien plustost. qu'il soit curieux de l'imiter en sa bonne grace.

Loüis. Il faut qu'un Courtisan soit pourveu de telles parties , qui le puissent recommander , & orner , & vous sçavez qu'il n'y a aucun exercice qui le puisse plus faire paroistre, & luy donner plus d'accez aux bonnes compagnies que la danse ; car de demeurer planté contre la tapisserie

M. Grave. I hold this exercise too ridiculous , & am perswaded it was invented by drunkards, who being heated with the fume of the wine , were stirred up to such foppish & unfit leapings and motions.

M. Wit. Yet for all that, the abuse of a thing ought not take away the use thereof : when a Gentleman learns from his youth to carrie his limbes well, he is afterward the apter for the handling of a sword, & bearing of armes : & yet I would not have a Gentleman be too ambitiously desirous to know so exactly the foot-skil of his teacher, but I wish he should rather be curious to imitate him in his grace-full carriage.

Lewis. A Courtier must bee furnished with such qualities, as may commend and adorne him , and you know that there is not any exercise that can more set him forth , and give him freer access into good companies , than dancing ; for , to stand stocke still against the hangings of a
d'une

d'une sale, comme un songe creux, & n'oser accepter une danse qui vous sera présentée, il me semble que cela est plus propre à un valet de chambre qu'à un Gentil-homme.

Du Sens. Je trouve le jeu de paume aussi fort seant à un Gentil-homme: car outre le plaisir qu'il y prend, encores y entretient-il sa santé. Quant aux échets & tablier, je les trouve plus propres à un vieillard, qu'à un jeune Gentil-homme, qui en son jeu ne doit demeurer assis sus une escabelle: & outre cela, il en procede un autre inconvenient, c'est que les jeux estans tous inventez pour la recreation, & pour effacer la tristesse, de ceux-cy ne peut proceder que melancholie & chagrin, pour estre difficiles & facheux à joier.

Loüis. Je tiens pour le jeu de cartes & dez que c'est rusticité & lourdisse qu'un Gentil-homme l'ignore.

Le Grave. Je seroy d'ad-

room, like a dreaming gull, and not to dare to accept a dance when it is offered, seemeth rather to bee fitter for a Groome of the chamber then for a Gentleman.

M. Wit. I hold also tennis play to be very seemly for a Gentleman: for besides the pleasure he may take therein, hee shall thereby also maintaine his health. As for Chess, and table-play, I hold them fitter for an old man, than for a young Gentleman, who in his play should not remaine sitting on a stoole: & besides, there proceedeth another inconvenience of it, namely, that whereas playes were all invented for recreation, and for to put away sadnesse, from these same comes nothing but melancholie and pensiveness, for that they are difficult and troublesome to play.

Lewis. As for dice and card-playing, I hold it a clownishnesse, and blockishnesse for a Gentleman to be ignorant in them.

M. Gr. And my opi-

vis qu'il ne sceust que c'est que de dez, ou de cartes, car cela incite à l'avarice, ou prodigalité, & l'enflamme à faire des querelles, que sont puis après difficiles à desmesler.

Du Sens. Monsieur, il y a bien de la distinction entre un jeu, & le mauvais usage où on le rapporte; c'est honneur de sçavoir par fois jouer à ces jeux, & qui donnent de l'entrée, & fait prendre privauté en la maison des grands, car ils aiment volontiers ceux qui les accompagnent aux exercices, où ils se delectent. Faisons donc des limites au jeu & ne les outrepassons point, & nous n'acquerrons point de blasme, honte & mespris. Je ne dis qu'il faille jouer, mais bien qu'on peut jouer, sans en faire mestier, aussi n'y a-il rien de plus honteux & mesprisé, & qui sente moins son enfant de bon lieu, qu'un joueur, & berlandier, qu'en a acquis le nom.

nion is, that he should not know what belongs to dice, or cardes, for that it stirreth up to covetousnesse or prodigality, and enflammeth men to quarrels, which can hardly afterwards be pacified.

M. Wit. Sir, there is some difference between a play or game, & the evill use whereunto it is put: it is a credite sometimes to be able to play at these games, being a meanes of entrance, & of growing into familiarity in the houses of great men, for they commonly love such as beare them company at the exercises wherein they delight. Let us then set limits unto play, & trāgressie not those bounds, so shall we not purchase any blame, shame and contempt. I say not that one must needs play, but that he may play, without making a trade of it; and indeed there is nothing more shamefull and contemptuous, and which savoureth lesse of noble breeding, than to be and have gotten the name of a common gamester, and hunter of dicing houses.

Le

Le Grave. Mais quand un violent & ardent desir de gaigner vous enflamme, ou la colere d'avoir perdu, est-ce un jeu, un exercice, un passe-temps ? n'est-ce pas plustost une passion, fureur & frenaisie ?

Du Sens. Là où cette avarice & convoitise de l'argent d'autrui, commence à gaigner un jeune homme, & le met hors de soy, qu'il trespigne, qu'il jure, blaspheme, maugrée, il n'en faut plus donner le blasme aux dez ou aux cartes, & dire que c'est le diable qui les a inventez, parce qu'en portant un tel vice sur soy, il pourra aussi bien faire paroistre sa passion à la paulme qu'en ce jeu. Partant, il ne faut pas blasmer le jeu, mais l'excès, l'aigreur, l'opiniaistreté & la mauvaise fin où on l'attache. Aussi ne s'y faut-il point tant opiniaistrer, tant pour éviter dissention, que d'autres inconveniens que le jeu enfante : car un Gentil-homme qui ne s'en corrige, s'y appauvri-
ra comme un gucux, &

M. Gr. But when men are entlamed with a violent and ardent desire of winning, or with choler for having lost, is it then a play, an exercise, or a pastime? is it not rather a passion, a furie & a madness ?

M. Wit. When as that greedy desire & covetousness of other mens mony beginneth to prevaile over a yong man, & to transport him so far from himselfe that he stampeth, that he sweares, blasphemeth and curseth, wee must no more blame the dice or cards, and say the divell invented them; for as much as carrying such a vice about him, hee may as well make his passion appeare at the tennis, as in this game. The play therefore is not to be blamed, but the excess thereof, the eagerness, the obstinacy, & the evill end that accompanies it. Neither must one be so obstinately bent unto it, both to avoide dissention, as also other inconveniences arising of play: for the Gentleman that will not correct himself of this, will bring himselfe to

y servira puis apres de fable & de joÿet du monde ; car quoy qu'on luy donne la moitié du tapis, tandis que son argent dure, on ne le reconnoistra plus, l'ayant perdu.

Le Grave. Laissons ces jeux là, & passons aux plus serieux. Pour le tirer des armes, c'est un exercice, qui ne veut estre appris si jeune que la danse, veu que la force y est plus requise.

Louis. Siest-ce qu'il ne faut pas laisser passer les dix ou douze ans, sans mettre quelque fleuret à la main d'un Gentil-homme ; car bien qu'il n'ait la force de s'en servir, il s'accoustume neantmoins d'avoir les armes belles, en attendant qu'il les puisse avoir bonnes tout ensemble.

Du Sens Mais il ne sert de rien au gracieux port & maniment des membres, ce que la danse a de particulier, mais il est bien plus necessaire, car il n'est pas si aisé de reparer

beggery, and will then become the common talke & jesting stock of every man: for though they affoord him his part of the carpet, whilest his money lasteth, yet that once lost, they will no more know him.

M. Grave. Let us leave these games, and passe to others more serious. For fencing or the handling & use of weapons, it is an exercise, which would not be learned so young as dancing, seeing that more strength is requisite to it.

Lewis. Yet must we not let 10. or 12. yeares of age passe over, without putting some foile into the hand of a young Gentleman; for though he have not strength enough to use it, yet he may accustom himselfe, to have his armes faire, in the meane time, till he may also have them good withall.

M. Wit. But it serveth nothing to the gracefull carriage and stirring of the limbes, as dancing in particular doth; yet it is farre more necessary, for it is not so easie a matter to repaire
les

les fautes qui se font à l'espée blanche, que de corriger celles qu'on commet en sortant de cadence en un branfle : quand vous avez un coup d'estocade à travers les costes, il ne faut plus dire, C'est à refaire.

Louïs. Vous en jugez fort bien. Aussi le Gentil-homme doit estre vert, prompt & resolu : & les assauts avec ceux de sa taille luy entretiennent la prattique des leçons de son maistre.

Du Sens. Encores n'est-il pas bien seant qu'un Gentil-homme aye souvent la face meurtrie de coups de fleurier, qui luy fait garder la chambre quelque jours, ou bien le retient d'aller veoir les compagnies en tel estat. partant ne suis-je d'avis, qu'il tire à toutes heures, ny avec toutes sortes de personnes.

Louis. Si faut-il qu'il s'exerce.

Du Sens. Je ne nie point qu'il ne soit utile de s'exercer, mais quoy qu'un Gentil-homme doive apprendre

the faults made with the naked sword, as to amend such as are committed in being out of cadence in a dance : when you have a thrust through the sides, it is to no purpose to say, Let us begin againe, it is but mending it.

Lew. You judge very well of it. Also the Gentleman ought to bee strong, ready and resolute : & the bickrings with others of his stature, should maintaine his practice of the lessons his master teacheth him.

M. Wit. Yet is it not seemely, that a Gentleman should have his face often battred with the blowes of a foile, so as to make him keepe his chamber some dayes, or keepe him from going to see the companies in that plight, therefore am I not of opinion, that he should at all houres be practising, nor with all sorts of persons.

Lew. Yet must he be exercised.

M. Wit. I denie not, but that it is profitable to exercise himself; but though a Gentleman ought to learn
ce qui

ce qui se peut monſtrer de cette ſcience, ſi ne faut-il qu'il en eſpere & attende ſon avantage, lequel ne luy doit eſtre aſſuré d'ailleurs que de la grandeur de ſon courage, qui ne luy fera apprehender ce que ſon ennemy en pourroit ſçavoir plus que luy.

Monſ. Sulli. Je deſire-roy que noſtre diſcours finy nous tiraſſions un coup.

Du Sens. Monſieur, à moy ne tiendra. Le monter à cheval eſt un exercice vraiment digne d'un enfant de bon lieu, mais n'eſtant pas une ſcience, qui s'apprenne en perfection en un an ou deux, je conſeille à celui qui n'a ou le loisir, ou le moyen d'en continuer l'apprentiſſage, qu'au moins le temps qu'il y employera ſoit tellement à ſon profit, qu'outre la belle aſſiette & ferme tenuë qu'il y acquerra, il ſçaſche paſſablement bien faire faire à un cheval tout ce qui eſt le plus neceſſaire pour le ſervice de la guerre, i ſçavoir, courir la

that which may be ſhewed him of this ſcience, yet muſt he not hope for and expect his advantage thereby, which ought to be aſſured unto him from no where elſe, but from the greatneſſe of his courage, which ſhall make him not feare the ſkill that his enemy may haply have more than he.

Monſ. Salli. I would faine, when our diſcourſe is ended, wee may have a bout at it.

M. Wit. Sir, there ſhall be no let in me. To ride a horſe is an exerciſe truly worthy of one nobly deſcended: but not being a ſcience, which is learned in perfection in a yeare or two, I counſell him which hath not either the leaſure, or meanes to continue his learning longer, that (at the leaſt) the time that he ſhall imploy therein, be ſo much to his profite, that beſides his comely ſitting, and firme hold which hee ſhall get, he may indifferently well be able to make his horſe do all that which is moſt neceſſarie for the
bague,

bague, & brider la potence, connoistre les marques des chevaux, toute sorte de poil, juger de leur bonté & tares, de l'age, & avoir les maladies auxquelles ils sont le plus subjects, & les remedes pour leur guerison.

Loüis. Cela ne suffit pour mettre un chevalier d'armes en campagne à tous essais, je veux qu'il sçache donner quarriere, voltiger en l'air, franchir le fossé, sauter le palis, court-tourner en un cercle, tant à dextre, qu'à fenestre, &c.

Monf. Sulli. Le voltiger est aussi compris aux exercices necessaires, car il sauve quelquefois la vie à celui qui se sçait jetter à propos dans la selle, ou sur la croupe d'un cheval, c'est ce qu'on y doit le plus apprendre.

Le Grave. Que dites vous des Mathematiques? La science en est tres-belle, tres-utile, & des plus necessaires à ceux qui veulent faire leur fortune dans les armes.

service of the war, to wit, to runne at the ring, to know the marks of horses, all the sortes of their colours, to judge of their goodnesse and faults, of their age, to know the diseases unto which they are most subject, and the remedies fit for their cure.

Lew. That is not sufficient for to fit a man at armes into the field at all assaies, I would have him have the skill to performe a carriere, to curvet aloft, to leape over a ditch, or over a pale, to turne short in a circle, both to the right hand and to the left.

Monf. Sulli. Vaulting is also comprised among the necessarie exercises, for sometimes it saveth the life of him which can fitly cast himselfe into the saddle, or on the crupper of a horse; this is that which ought to be learned by him most.

M. Gr. What say you of the Mathematikes? the knowledge thereof is most commendable & most profitable, & one of the most necessarie for them that would make their fortunes in Armes.

Monf.

Monf. Sul. C'est un Dedale, car elles ont tant de parties, que pour les apprendre une chascune à fond, il y faudroit dix vies d'hommes.

Le Grave. Aussi n'est-il de besoing que cela soit appris à fond.

Du Sens. Mais qui est la base & fondement de toutes les parties? n'est-ce pas l'Arithmetique?

Le Grave. Justement, car elle traite des nombres, qui sont les instrumens desquels on se sert pour exprimer les dimensions.

Du Sens. Qu'est-ce qui suit apres.

Le Gr. La Cosmographie, en laquelle est comprise la description du Ciel, qu'on dit Astrologie, & celle de la terre, qu'on dit Geographie.

Monf. Sul. Je trouve que la Geographie ayde beaucoup à celuy qui se veut avancer en l'estude d'histoire; car elle a cela de beau, qu'elle discourt de diverses regions, nations, Royaumes, Provinces, fleuves, de mers, & autres choses, qui sont à

Monf. Sul. It is a Dedalus labyrinth, for it hath so many parts, that for to learne each of them to the full depth, would require ten mens lives.

M. Grave. Neither is it needfull to be learned so, to the very depth thereof.

M. Wit. But what is the ground and foundation of all the parts? is it not Arithmeticke?

M. Grave. Right sir, for that treateth of numbers, which are the instruments used to expresse dimensions by.

M. Wit. What followeth after that?

M. Gr. Cosinographie, in which is comprehended the description of the heaven, called Astrologie, and that of the earth, called Geographie.

Monf. Sul. I finde that Geographie helpeth much him that will forward himself in the studie of historie; for it hath this good in it, that it discourseth of divers regions, nations, Kingdomes, Provinces, rivers, seas, and other things, which are to bee
considerer

considerer en tout ce grand corps & pourpris de l'univers. Je n'eusse jamais scû si bien retenir & entendre mon histoire de Thucidide, si je n'eusse adjou-
sté à la lection d'iceluy, la table de Grece, où j'ay peu reconnoistre l'assiette des lieux, les mers, fleuves, ruisseaux, les journées que faisoient les Capitaines avec leurs armées, leurs approches, retirades, des-
tours, en somme, il me sembloit voir le tout à l'œil, & au vif, j'y ay peu ap-
prendre plusieurs ruses & fines-
ses, stratagemes, ad-
vantages, d'un party sur son ennemy, & autres pe-
tites observations, qui il-
lustrent l'histoire, & en es-
claircissent l'intelligence.

Du Sens. Voila qui con-
vient à un historien, & à
un bon soldat, mais en par-
ticulier quelle partie est la
plus necessaire à un homme
d'armes?

Le Grave. C'est la Geo-
metrie proprement, car elle
luy apprend à mesurer la
profondeur d'un fossé, la
hauteur d'une tour, l'esten-

considered in all this great
body & circuit of the uni-
verse. I could never have
beene able so well to un-
derstand & remember my
historic of Thucidides, if
I had not added to the
reading of the same, the
Mappe of Greece, where-
in I might know the situa-
tion of places, the seas, ri-
vers, brookes, the journeys
made by the Captains with
their armies, their appro-
ches, retirings, turnings a-
side; in a word, me thought
I saw all with the eye, and
to the life; I might learne
thereby many subtilties &
cunnings, stratagemes, ad-
vantages of one partie over
his enemy, & other small
observations, which illu-
strate the history, & cleere
the understanding of it.

M. Wit. All this agreeth
well to an historian, and
to a good souldier, but in
particular which part is
the most necessarie for a
man at armes?

M. Gr. That is Geome-
trie properly; for it tea-
cheth him to measure the
depth of a ditch, the height
of a tower, the whole ex-
tend

duë d'une campagne ; en son eschole faut-il apprendre la science de bien fortifier une place , de l'attaquer , de la defendre ; elle l'instruiet comme il faut faire un retranchement , comme il faut loger une armée , comme on la range en bataille , quel ordre elle tient en marchant , quel devant une ville , quel au lever d'un siege.

Du Sens. Il faut non seulement avoir la connoissance & theorie de cela , mais il le faut aussi rapporter à la pratique , à l'œuvre & à l'action.

Voila en gros tous les utiles & necessaires exercices , que je peux requerir en un Gentil-homme , il reste encores à parler de la chasse. Je trouve la chasse estre un exercice fort propre à un Gentil-homme , qui est desja retiré en sa maison , & sur ses biens ; mais tel s'y passionne & agit avec tant d'excez , que vous ne l'oyez jamais parler que de ses oyseaux , ou chiens , rompant & ruinant tout pour ce seul plaisir.

tent of a field; in her school must he learn the science of well fortifying a place, how to assault it, how to defend it; she instructeth him how he must make a Trench, how he must lodge an army, how to set it in battail array, what order it must observe in marching, what before a Towne, and what at the raising of a siege.

M. Wit. Hee must have not onely the knowledge and theorie of that, but must also bring the same unto practice, to operation, and to action.

Here are in generall all the profitable & necessarie exercises, that I can require in as Gentleman, it remains yet to speake of Hunting. I finde hunting to bee an exercise very fit for a Gentleman, which is already retired home to his house, and upon his meanes; but some are so passionatly carried away with so much excessie herein, that you can heare them speake of nothing else but of their hawkes, or dogs, breaking down and destroying all for this onely pleasure..

Louis.

Louïs. Pour routes vos raisons, ne voudrois-je oster à un Gentil-homme la chasse, quoy qu'il ne fust encore retiré en sa maison.

Du Sens. Je ne dis pas qu'il la luy faille oster tout à fait, mais j'entens qu'il n'y doibt pas du tout employer son estude, & en faire mestier ordinaire, au contraire, je veux qu'il soit bien instruit à toute sorte de chasse, pour en sçavoir discourir en termes propres, & n'estre veu ignorer ce qui est fort commun à ceux de sa qualité.

Monf. Sulli. Or ça, veu que nous avons achevé la carrière de nostre discours, Page, apporte icy les fleurets, & tirons un coup ou deux, Monsieur du Sens vous & moy.

Du Sens. Je le veux bien : mais à quoy ? à l'espée & poignard, ou à l'espée seule ?

Monf. Sulli. A l'espée seule. Allons donc, mettez vous en garde.

Leu. Notwithstanding all your reasons, I would not debar a Gentleman from hunting, though hee be not yet retired home to his house.

M Wit. I say not that he should be debarred from it altogether, but my meaning is, that hee ought not wholly employ his study in it, & make an ordinary occupation of it; yet on the contrary, I would have him be well instructed in all sort of hunting and hawking, for to be able to discourse of it in proper termes, & not to be seen ignorant in that which is so very common to all them of his quality or degree.

Monf. Sul. Come, seeing wee have finished the carriere of our discourse, Page, bring hither the foiles, and let us play a bout or two, Master Wit, you and I.

M. Wit. With all my heart : but at what ? at sword and dagger, or at single rapier ?

Monf. Sul. At single rapier : Come then, put you upon your gard.

Louïs.

Loüis. *Avancez-vous, battez du pied en frappant sur le fleuret de vostre homme, poussez & rabattez en vous retirant.*

Monf. Sulli. *Ay-je bien fait?*

Loüis. *Vous n'estendez pas assez le bras, tenez le corps droit & le pied ferme.*

Du Sens. *Tenez, voila un beau coup d'estoc.*

Monf. Sulli. *Ho, je le tiens, je m'en vengeray. Tenez, voila un beau coup d'estramacon.*

Du Sens. *Je l'ay presque paré trop tard.*

Loüis. *Essayez à faire les feintes.*

Monf. Sulli. *Ho, me voila engagé.*

Loüis. *Desgager-vous en passant vostre fleuret par dessous. Vous n'êtes pas assuré de vostre coup, il le faut bien loger avant que le porter. Retirez vous & vous remettre en garde. Abordez & poussez ferme, ne levez ainsi le pied de derriere, car cela vous emporte tout le corps, levez la main gauche, pour avoir*

Lew. Step farwards sir, beat your foot to the ground when you strike on your fellowes foile, thrust and beate backe in your retreat.

Monf. Sul. Have I done well?

Lew. You stretch not out your arme enough, hold your body straight, and your foot steedy.

M. Wit. Hold, there is a faire thrust.

M. Sul. Ho, I have it, I will bee revenged. Hold, there is a faire downe-right blow.

M. Wit. I have almost warded it too late.

Lew. Trie to make your false proffers.

Monf. Sul. Ha, now I am engaged.

*Lew. Disengage your self by passing your foile underneath. You are not certaine of your thrust, you must aime it well, before you give it. Withdraw your selfe, & put your self againe upō your guard. Approach, & thrust firmly, list not so up your hinder foot, for that will sway with it all the body, list up your left
du*

The second Dialogue.

189

*du contre-poids : & bien,
voilà une estocade, qui n'est
pas mal portée.*

Monf. Sul. Je suis las.

Du Sens. Reposez vous.

*Monf. Sul. Allons, retir-
vous nous.*

hand, to have some coun-
terpoise : well ; there is a
thrust indifferent well car-
ried.

Monf. Sul. I am wearie.

M. Wit. Rest you.

*Monf. Sul. Let us go, let
us withdraw our selves.*

Dialogue

○



Dialogue troisieme.

Du Voyageur.

CAsannier. Je n'approuve point la peregrination : premierement, pource que nous n'avons que faire de sçavoir ce qui se fait ailleurs, ains avons assez à soigner, & nous occuper chez nous.

Eudoxe. Le circuit de la terre n'a il pas esté fait pour le manoir & habitation de l'homme ? pourquoy donc en devrions nous ignorer les estres & parties ? N'oserons-nous pas aller admirer les œuvres divines & incomparables qui y sont, pour en louer l'ouvrier ?

Cas. Mais dequoy nous sert cela ? quel fruit peut on tirer de la peregrination ?

Eud. La peregrination rend les hommes advisez, prudens & discrets, non seulement pour leur utilité, mais pour le bien du public.

The third Dialogue.

Of the Traveller.

CAsanner. I like not this travelling : first, because we have nothing to doe to know what is done in other countries, but have enough to take care for, and to employ our selves in at home.

Eudoxus. Was not the circuit of the earth made for the habitation & dwelling place of man ? why then should we be ignorant of the passages and parts thereof ? shall we not dare to goe to admire the divine and incomparable workes which are therein, for to give praise to the Workman ?

Cas. But what good doth that doe us ? what fruit may wee reape of travelling ?

Eud. Travelling maketh men become wary, wise & discreet, not only for their owne profire, but also for the good of the Commonweale.

Cas.

Cas. On n'acquerra pas grand' prudence des mers, montagnes & bois.

Curieux. Ne sçavez-vous pas les vers d'Homere, qui parlant d'Ulysse, qu'il propose au monde comme un patron d'un personnage caut & prudent, dit: Ulysse heureux je nomme, Qui de sçavoir pourveu. A les mœurs de maint hommes, Et mainte terre veu.

Cas. Tout cela est bon: mais quand on fait un tel assemblage & bigarrure de mœurs, pour la plus part corrompues, comme le monde est plus addonné au mal, qu'au bien, à quoy ressemble un tel homme? de quel goust est-il?

Eud. Un homme pour peu discret qu'il soit, sçaura discerner le bien du mal, & la vertu du vice, & s'il se rencontre par fois en mauvaise compagnie, il evitera neantmoins, toutes les occasions qui le pourroit faire chopper. Il luy faut faire comme les abeilles qui des fleurs, herbes & racines venimeuses tirent le meilleur suc & le convertissent en miel.

Cas. A man can get no great wisdom from seas, mountaines and woods.

Curious. Know you not the verses of Homer, who speaking of Ulysses (whom he sets forth to the world as a patterne of a warie & prudent person) saith: Ulysses, fraught with skill, a happy man hath been. Many mens maners hee, & many a land had seen.

Cas. All that is good: but when a man contracts in himselfe such a medley and diversity of manners for the most part corrupt, as the world is more given to evill than to good, unto what doth such a man resemble? of what taste is he?

Eud. A man, though not very discreet, may be able to discern good from evill, & vertue from vice, and if sometimes he chance into evill companie, hee shall neverthelesse shunne all the occasions which might make him fall. Hee must do as the honie-bees, who from flowers, hearbes, and rootes venemous, do draw the best juice, and convert it into honie.

1^{re} Cas. Mais un jeune homme, qui n'a pas grand jugement, comment peut-il discerner tout cela ?

Eud. A ceux qui sont trop jeunes, où depourvus de jugement, on leur donne de conducteurs, qui leur servent de conseillers.

Cas. Ne considerez vous pas d'autre part, les dangers auxquels se hasardent telles gens qui font voyages, & puis combien de travaux il leur faut supporter.

Cur. Pour les dangers, il les faut prévoir par prudence : mais si on en vouloit tousjours aussi penser, & se laisser espouventer de tout ce qui pourroit advenir, l'on ne feroit jamais rien qui vaille ; & quant aux travaux, vous sçavez qu'on ne peut cueillir la rose sans se piquer. Aide toy, Dieu t'aydera.

Cas. Mais que requerez vous en celui qui veut dresser un voyage ?

Eud. Il faut que le voyageant ait de l'age, environ vingt ans ; qu'il soit accom-

Cas. But a young man, which hath no great judgment, how can he discern all that ?

Eud. Those which are too young, & unfurnished of judgement, must have guides given them, which may serve them for counsellors.

Cas. You consider not on the other side the dangers in which such as travell doe hazzard themselves, and also how many labours they must endure.

Cur. As for the dangers, they must be prevented by wisdom : and if a man should alwaies thinke on them, and suffer himselfe to be affrighted with all that might happen, hee should never doe any thing to any great purpose ; and as for labours, you know, a man cannot gather the rose without pricking himselfe. Helpe thy selfe, and God will helpe thee.

Cas. But what require you in him that is to goe a voyage, or to travell ?

Eud. The traveller must have age, as about twenty ; he must bee accompanied

pagné

pagné de jugement, qu'il soit pourveu de sçavoir, & bien versé aux lettres, & arts necessaires; qu'il ayt la connoissance des histoires, & quelque bon & fondamental commencemēt de la langue du païs, où il veut aller; & finalement soitourny d'argent à suffisance. Et pource que tout ce que vous en avez de profit, est l'elegance des mœurs qui vous accompagnent, & la confirmation du jugement, pour tant faut-il qu'un jeune homme soit accompagné de quelque personne d'honneur, avec tant de profit & utilité, que les diverses nations estrangeres, qu'il aura veuës luy forment le jugement, pour en rapporter non la fleur, non la fueille, mais bien le fruit tout meur & entier.

Cal. Sont-ce là toutes les parties requises en qui veut peregriner?

Eud. Oüy, mais j'ay outre cela une loy comprise en ces vers:

Donne à l'humilité son manoir dans ton cœur;

with judgement, furnished with knowledge, well seen in good literature, & in necessarie arts; he must have the knowledge of histories, and some good and fundamentall beginning in the language of the cuntry, whither he goeth; & lastly, he must bee sufficiently furnished with money. And because all the profite you have is the elegance of the manners which accompanies you, and the confirmation of your judgement, it is meet a young man should be accompanied with some person of credite; with so much profite and utilitie, that the divers strange nations hee shall see, doe forme his judgement, that hee may bring backe, not the flower, nor the leaves, but the whole fruit ripe also.

Cal. Are these all the parts requisite in him that would travell?

Eud. Yes, yet I have besides that a law comprehended in these verses:

Bee milde of countenance, and mecke of minde;

Fay que de son rideau ta
face soit voilée.

Assiste à un chacun à nul ne
donne aigreur

Ny nuisance; en ton fait
sois soigneux, & ne bée.

Ou te meste d'autrui, mais
voy d'un œil prudent;

A qui te fieras: au plus
petit pardonne.

Supporte ton pareil, par
douceur cede au grand

Ton secret tient secret, n'en
fay part à personne.

Sois bien bon escouteur,
mais fort petit parleur.

Ayes un œil veillant, &
sois sobre de bouche,

Veritable au parler, des
bons prompt amateur.

Endure les meschans, quoy
qu'ils soyent fort farou-
ches:

Mais sur tout crains Dieu,
qui tout void & tout oit.

Et que frauder ne peut au-
cune tromperie.

Si tout cela tu fais, tres-
seur en tout endroit,

Converser tu pourras, mes-
mes en Barbarie.

Caf. Mais en fin, quel
profit tirera-il d'avoir veu
tant de villes pays, maisons,
hommes & bestes?

Doe wrong to none, to all
be good and kinde.

In thine owne businesse be
thou diligent;

Deale not with other
mens, lest thou repent.

And when thou trust's
take heed, be ever warie:

Heare much, talke little,
keepe thy secrets charie.

Inferiours spare, to betters
yeeld their due.

Beare with thy equals,
peace will so ensue.

Bee sober, watchfull, true,
of promise sure.

Loving to good men, evill
men endure.

Feare G O D above all
things, whose eyes per-
ceive,

And eares heare all, no
man can him deceive.

Thus amongst strangers
maist thou safely be,

And live secure in midst
of Barbarie.

Caf. But at length, what
profite shall a man receive,
by having scene so many
Cities, countries, houses,
men and beasts?

Eud.

Eud. Ce n'est pas la seule difference d'un clocher à l'autre; que je desire qu'il aille remarquant en son voyage; & tout ainsi que le laissant chez luy entre les bras de sa grand mere, il ne peut que croupir en une lourde & crasse ignorance, aussi quoy qu'on le remue de ville en ville, de pays en pays, il ne se faut pas promettre, qu'il en deviendra plus habille homme, si n'exerceant que ses yeux corporels à regarder les choses par le dehors, il ne les penetre, mesmes jusques aux entrailles des yeux de l'esprit.

Cas. Ce qui m'en a parcy devant tant desgousté, c'a esté que j'ay veu à la cour plusieurs Gentils-hommes de ma connoissance, qui en tous leurs discours de leurs voyages d'Italie, ne font qu'admirer les Palais des Italiens, & racontent comme ils y ont appris le nom de toutes les Courtisannes de Venise, & de Rome; & d'autres qui en leur voyage d'Allemagne n'ont appris qu'à cognoistre la difference du vin de Rhin à

Eud. It is not the distance of one steeple from another that I desire, a man should go observing in his travell: and like as leaving him at home in his grandames armes, he cannot but settle in a clownish & grosse ignorance, so also though he be removed from city to citie, from countrie to countrie, he must not promise himselfe, to bee the more wise and able man, if exercising only his bodily eyes in beholding things outwardly, he doe not with all pierce even into the bowels of things with the eyes of his minde.

Cas. That which hath heretofore so much distasted me, was this, that I saw at court many Gentlemen of mine acquaintance, who in all their discourses of their voyages into Italy, doe nothing but admire the Palaces of the Italians, and tell how they have learned there the names of all the curtizans of Venice and of Rome; & others which in their voyage of Germany, have only learned to know the difference between Ren-

*Celuy d'Orleans, que c'est
que boire des santez, boire
à la ronde, & autres telles
bali verneries.*

*Cnr. Ce n'est icy que
nous demandons telles testes
sans cervelle, qui ne s'amuse-
sent qu'à choses basses, vi-
les, & communes.*

*Cas. Comment voulez-
vous donc que le Gentil-
homme voyage, pour se pre-
valoir de sa peregrination?*

*Eud. Il y a deux points
nécessairement considera-
bles au voyageant, qui con-
sistent à se prendre garde du
corps, & de l'ame des choses.*

*Cas. Qu'entendez-vous
par le corps?*

*Eud. J'appelle le corps
tout ce que l'œil peut veoir
de plus remarquable en une
Ville, en une Province, en
un Royaume, comme sont
toutes sortes d'edifices,
comme Temples, Monaste-
res, Chappelles, les Palais,
Hostels de ville, marchez,
havres, ponts, ports, portes,
murailles, fortressez, ba-
stions, Hospitaux, Hales,
Colleges, Arsenals; les bel-
les maisons des Bourgeois,
beau jardins, viviers, fon-*

*nish wine and Orleans
wine, what it is to drinke
healths, to drinke round,
and other such gulleries.*

*Cur. We require not for
travellers such brainlesse
heads at those, which one-
ly busie themselves about
base, vile, and common
things.*

*Cas. How would you
have a Gentleman travell
for to benefite himselfe by
his peregrination?*

*Eud. Two points are
necessarily considerable in
a Traveller, namely, that
he take heed to the body,
and to the soule of things.*

*Cas. What meane you by
the body?*

*Eud. I call the body all
that which the eye may see
most remarkable in a City,
in a Province, in a King-
dome, as are all sorts of
buildings, as Temples, or
Churches, Monasteries,
Chappells, Palaces, Town-
houses, market-places, ha-
vens, bridges, portes, gates,
walls, fortresses, fortifica-
tions, Hospitalls, Market-
houses, Colledges, Arce-
nals; the faire houses of the
Burgesses, the fair gardens,
taines.*

aines. Et en tout cela, il y faut aussi veoir & remarquer toutes les antiquitez, comme Amphitheatres, Colomnes, Pyramides, Statuës, Tombeaux, & ainsi s'enquerir de ce qu'il y a de plus rare à voir en un pais ou Ville.

Cur. Voila quant au corps & à l'exterieur, il vous reste maintenant de traiter de l'interieur.

Eud. L'ame consiste proprement à s'enquerre, si le pais ou la ville où l'on se trouve sont regis & gouvernez en Monarchie, Aristocratie, ou Democratie. Et aussi, vous vous enquerrez du temps de la fondation & du fondateur, & combien de races il y en a eu, & si l'estat a esté jadis autre qu'aujourd'huy; & si aujourd'huy il est electif ou hereditaire; vous pourrez par mesme moyen apprendre non seulement le nom antique & moderne, mais aussi vous informer des choses, qui dès la memoire des habitants s'y sont passées, pour vous inciter à rechercher l'histoire. Si c'est une Republique, vous orrez quels sont ses

fishponds, fountains. And in all this must you see and observe all the antiquities, as Amphitheatres, Pillars, Pyramides, Statues, Tombs, and so enquire of that which is most rare to be seen in a countrey or City.

Cur. So much for the body & outside of things, it resteth now you should intreat of the inward.

Eud. The soule consisteth properly in informing your selfe, whether the country or City be governed by a Monarchicall, Aristocraticall, or Democraticall government. And you shall also enquire of the time of the foundation, and of the founder, and how many races or houses there hath beene, and if the state were other in times past then now, & if now it be elective or hereditary; you may by the same means learn not only the ancient and moderne name, but also informe you of such things, as since the memory of the inhabitants have there passed, the better to stirre you up to search out
Seigneurs,

Seigneurs, en quel nombre ils sont; combien de temps ils exercent leur charge, quel ordre on tient en leur election, à qui c'est à la faire, de quelle qualité ils doivent estre, de quels privileges ils jouissent, quelle autorité ils ont; Combien il y a de Conseils, & combien il y entre de Conseillers en chascun, combien de Jurisdiccions ou Chambres de Justice, quelles sont les subalternes, & quelles les Souveraines, s'ils se servent de droicts municipaux ou estrangers.

Cur. Tout cela concerne la police & gouvernement: mais quand direz vous des revenus?

Eud. C'est le point où je passe maintenant: Je veux donc que le voyageant s'enqueste du revenu ordinaire & annuel d'un Estat, & en quoy il consiste, si c'est en domaine, en taille ou imposts sur les subjects, ou autres droicts: Il faut aussi sçavoir si un tel estat peut plus en Infanterie qu'en Cavalerie: Quels sont ses voi-

the history. If it be a Common-wealth, you shall heare who are it Lords, how many in number they are, how long time they stay in their office, what order is held in their election, who are to make it, of what quality or condition they ought to be, what privileges they enjoy, what authority they have; How many Councels there is, and how many Counsellors are in each of them, how many Jurisdiccions, or Courts of Justice; which are subordinate, and which Sovereign, if they use lawes municipall or forraigne.

Cur. All this concerneth the policy & government, but when will you speake of the revenues?

Eud. I passe to that point now. I would have then the traveller make inquirie of the ordinarie and yearly revenue of a State, and wherein it consisteth, if it be in demesnes, in taxes or imposts on the subjects, or other rights: Hee must also know if such a State be more powerfull in Foot or in Horse: What are it
fixs,

ins ou alliez, s'ils subsistent d'eux-mesmes, ou s'ils sont souz la protection d'autrui; en quoy cét Estat & ses voisins peut plus pour la guerre; si c'est en mer ou en terre, & pour cét esgard faut sçavoir l'affiette d'un tel lieu, &c.

Cur. Il seroit aussi besoing de sçavoir tous les ports; quels les plus forts, & quels les moindres; s'il y a garnison, & si le peuple du país est addroit aux armes; combien de vaisseaux ils peuvent armer; quelle sorte, si ce sont galeres ou navires.

Eud. Il faut aussi sçavoir quels sont leurs Capitaines & gens portans charge, & quelle discipline militaire ils observent, de quelles armes ils se servent, s'ils sont meilleurs à l'assaut, ou en bataille rangée, quelle est la creance des Capitaines envers leurs soldats, quelles fa-veurs leurs Maistres & Seigneurs leur portent, Outre cela, il faut venir aux vil-les frontieres, les veoir, &

neighbors or confederates, whether they sub sist of themselves, or bee under the protection of another, in what consists the power of this State & its neighbours for the warre; if it be by sea or by land, and to this effect must hee know the situation of such a place, &c.

Cur. It shall be also need- full to know all the Ports; which are the stronger, which the weaker; if there be a garrison, & if the peo- ple of the countrie be skil- full in Armes; how many vessels they can arme forth to sea; of what sort, whe- ther ships or gallies.

Eud. He must also know what are their Captaines and men bearing charge, & what military discipline they observe, what armes or weapons they use, whe- ther they are better at an assault, or in a maine bat- taile, what authoritie the Captaines have with their souldiers, & what favours their Lords and Masters beare to them. Moreover, he must visite the frontier Townes, see them, and
recon-

reconnoistre le fort & le foible. Il faut aussi juger de la façon que les peuples obeïssent, si c'est par amour ou contrainte, & s'ils sont bien affectionnez à leurs supérieurs; & puis les avenues du païs, l'aisance ou difficulté d'un passage, havre, & riviere.

Cur. Vous ne dites rien des gens de lettres.

Eud. Ils ne sont point oubliés: Il faut sçavoir si les doctes sont en multitude ou paucité en un Estat, Quelles Academies & Colleges ils ont, de quels privileges jouïssent les escoliers, s'il y a frequence; Quelle faculté y est la plus florissante, à qui est deferé la charge du Rectorat, quels Theologiens, Philosophes, Medecins, jurisconsultes, ou Docteurs es loix, Historians, Poëtes, Mathematiciens, s'ils sont du lieu, ou estrangers, &c.

Cur. En voila beaucoup: j'y adjoûteray encore les mœurs du commun peuple,

know the strong and the weak. He must also judge in what fashion the peoples doe obey, whether it be by love or constraint, & whether they stand well affectionate towards their superiours; And then the entries into the countrey, the easynesse or difficulty of a passage, haven, or river.

Cur. You say nothing of men of learning.

Eud. They are not forgotten: Hee must know if in a state, the number of learned men bee many or few, What Universities and Colledges they have, what priviledges the scholars injoy; Whether there be great frequencie, which facultie is the most flourishing, to whom is deferred the Rectorship or Headship; what Divines, Philosophers, Physitians, Lawyers or Civilians, Historians, Poets, Mathematicians there are, and whether they are home-borne, or strangers, &c.

Cur. There is much: I will adde hereto also the manners of the common

àſſavoir ſ'il eſt affable ou
rechigneux, vertueux ou
vicieux, ſ'il ayme l'eſtran-
ger ou non: Mais pource
que la multitude des cho-
ſes, qui ſont à remarquer en
un Eſtat & païs luy pour-
roit affoiblir la memoire
pour luy en deſrober quel-
que partie, ie ſerois d'ad-
vis, qu'on aye un livre af-
ſez grand, pour en iceluy
eſcrire le tout en bon ordre.
Et je conſeille au voyageant
d'avoir outre les guides des
chemins, une carte Geogra-
phique & Hydrographique
de tous les pays & contrées
où il ſe trouvera, pour en
icelle tirer de lieu à autre
une ligne à meſure qu'il
s'avance en ſon voyage,
& avec cela aye un journal
en guiſe d'Almanach, où il
nottera le jour à autre tou-
tes les villes, bourgs, vil-
lages, chasteaux, paſſages,
deſtroits, ſans oublier les
lieuës, ce qu'à loisir il pour-
ra mettre au net en ſon
grand livre de remarques.

Eud. Mais, afin qu'il ne
voyage point comme enfant
du commun, il luy ſera

people, to wit, whether
they bee courteous or cur-
riſh, vertuous or vitious,
& if they love ſtrangers, or
no: But becauſe the mul-
titude of things obſervable
in a State and country, may
confound the memorie,
whereby ſome part may
ſlippe away, my opinion is,
he ſhould have a booke of
ſufficient bigneſſe, whcrein
to write down all in good
order. And I counſell our
traveller to have (beſides
his guides for the wayes)
a Mappe Geographicall &
Hydrographicall of all the
countries & places where
he ſhall come, for to draw
therein a line from place
to place, according as hee
goeth forwards in his voy-
age, & withall have a day-
booke in faſhion of an Al-
manake, wherein hee ſhall
note from day to day, all
the Cities, towns, villages,
Cattles, paſſages, ſtraites,
not forgetting the leagues
or miles, which at leaſure
he may write faire into his
great book of obſervatiōs.

Eud. But that hee may
not travell like one of
common or meane deſcent,
meſſeant,

meffiant & comme indigne de fa qualité, de paffer en la Cour d'aucun Prince, fans avoir l'honneur de luy faire la reverence, & de fe faire connoiftre à luy, & aux plus grands de fon païs.

Cur. Vrayement un tel homme qui aura tellement voyagé, & converfé avec les grands, & en tant de lieux & occafions, ne peut avoir qu'aflez de fuffifance pour fervir à un Roy, à un Eftat, & au bien public.

Eud. Vous reconnoiftrez troisfois plus de modeltie, douceur & humilité en un tel homme, qu'en aucun autre Cafannier, qui n'aura jamais rien veu que par le pertuis d'un pot caffé, comme trouvez de ces glorieux, qui pour fe voir fur les ef-paules quelque habit à la nouvelle mode de la Cour, enflent comme crapaux eftiment que les autres Gentils-hommes foyent bien quelque chofe moins qu'eux, leur voyant porter quelque pourpoint, manteau, ou autre accouftrement qui ait encores fon garbe à l'antique, & ne jureront d'une

it fhall mifbecome him, and be unworthy his quality, to paffe into the Court of any Prince, without having the honour to do him reverence, & to make himfelfe known to him, and to the greateft of his country.

Cur. Truly fuch a man, that hath fo travelled, and converfed with great ones, and in fo many places and occafions, cannot choofe but have fufficiency enough in him for the fervice of a King, of a State, and of the common-wealth.

Eud. You fhall perceive three times more modeltie, gentlenefle, & humility in fuch a man, than in any other houfe-dove, which hath never feen any thing, but through the hole of a broken pot; as you finde of thefe vaine-glorious fooles, who having gotten on their backe fome fuite of apparell of the new Court-fafhion, fwoln like toades, efteme other Gentlemen their inferiours, in feeing them weare fome doublet, cloakes or other apparell which is yet of the ancient fafhion; and will
perfonne

personne au sens, au discours, ou à l'intégrité des mœurs, mais seulement à la forme de son chapeau, à la grandeur de sa fraise, ou à telle autre chose extérieure.

Cur. Un diamant de la vieille roche, quoy que tout brut, ou mal enchaîné, ou mal poli, est tousjours plus précieux qu'une hachelourde, pour tout l'esmail, feuille & façon, dont elle pourroit estre enrichie.

Eud. Or c'est assez : Messieurs, vous remerciant de vostre bonne compagnie, vous presenteray mes très-humbles services. Adieu Messieurs.

not judge of a man by his wit, and understanding, by his discourse, or by the integrity of his manners, but onely by the fashion of his hat, the greatness of his ruffe, or by some such other outward thing.

Cur. A true Diamond of the old rocke, though yet uncut or ill set, or ill polished, is ever more precious than a counterfeit, for all the enamell, foyle, and fashion, wherewith it can be enriched.

Eud. Well, we have talked enough Gentlemen; thanking you for your good company, I present you my most humble service. God bee with you Gentlemen.

QUEL-

QUELQUES COM-
plimens François, choisis
dulivre de M. L. Miche,
de la courtoisie Fran-
çoise.

Pour faire la reverence à
un grand Seigneur.

Monseigneur, Comme
 je tiens à tres-grande
 faveur le bien de pouvoir
 saluer, & faire la reverence
 à vostre grandeur : aussi
 me repouteray-je tousjours
 tres-heureux qu'elle m'ac-
 cepte desormais pour son
 tres-humble & tres-obei-
 sant serviteur.

Autrement.

Monseigneur, Le rang
 que vous tenez entre les
 grands, & tant de belles
 qualitez qui sont en vous,
 m'obligent à vous faire of-
 fre de ce peu qui est en moy,
 pour vous pouvoir rendre en
 toutes occasions tres-hum-
 ble service.

A FEW FRENCH
 Complements, chosen
 out of M. L. Miche his
 booke of the French
 courtesie.

How to doe reverence to
a great Lord.

My Lord, As I hold
 this benefite for a sin-
 gular favour, to be able to
 salute, & doe reverence to
 your Lordship : so I shall
 ever repute my selfe most
 happie, if you vouchsafe
 henceforth to accept me
 for your most humble and
 most obedient servant.

Otherwise.

My Lord, The honorable
 place you hold among the
 Greatest, and the exquisite
 qualities wherewith you
 are endowed, do oblige me
 to offer unto your Lord-
 ship the uttermost of that
 little is in me, that I may
 be able to render unto you
 upon all occasions my
 humble service.

Antre-

Autrement.

Monseigneur, *Vostre excellence me permettra, s'il luy plaist, de luy rendre ce petit devoir en luy faisant la reverence, attendant que le Ciel me face naistre quelque favorable occasion, où je luy puisse faire voir par les effects, combien j'ay desiré en mon ame de luy pouvoir rendre quelque service.*

A une grande Dame.

Madame, *Avec vostre permission, je prendray la hardiesse de vous faire la reverence, & dire que je ne desire au monde avec plus de passion, que d'estre vostre tres-humble & tres-fidelle serviteur.*

Pour aller saluer un amy nouvellement arrivé de voyage.

Alcandre. *Monsieur, aussi tost que j'ay sceu vostre désiré retour, je n'ay voulu manquer à mon devoir, de vous venir saluer, pour vous continuër l'offre de mon humble service.*

Cloriman. *Monsieur, je*

Otherwise.

My Lord, May it please your Excellencie vouchsafe to permit me to render unto you this slender devoir of doing you reverence, untill Heaven shall afford me some favourable occasion, wherein I may by effects make knowne unto your Excellency, how much I desire in my soule to be able to doe you some service.

To a great Ladie.

With your permission; Madam, I presume to doe you reverence, and to say that I desire nothing in this world with greater passion, than to bee your most humble and most faithfull servant.

To salute a friend newly arrived from travell.

Alcander. *Sir, so soone as I knew of your desired returne, I would not bee wanting of my duty in comming to salute you, that I may continue unto you the tender of my humble service.*

Cloriman. *Sir, I am yours*
P *suis*

suis vostre bien humble, mais je suis infiniment marry, que vous m'ayez envié l'honneur de vous aller visiter le premier, comme c'estoit mon intention de me porter chez vous, aussi tost que je me serois tant soit peu rafraichy, parce que je ne say que arriver.

Al. Monsieur, j'eusse esté bien marry de vous donner la peine de venir chez nous; c'est pourquoy je vous ay voulu prevenir, & me rendre icy dès aussi tost que j'ay eue le vent de vostre arrivée.

Clo. Monsieur, vous m'obligez trop, & vous remercie d'avoir pris la peine de venir icy, puis que c'estoit moy qui vous estoit tenu de ce devoir.

Al. Vous ne devez pas user de ces termes à l'endroit du moindre de vos serviteurs, & qui n'a de devoir & l'obeyssance que pour vous le sacrifier.

Clo. Ce sera moy qui s'eschiray tousjours sous la loy de vos commandemens. Vous me faites mille fois plus d'honneur que je n'ay

most humbly, but am infinitely sorrie, you have envied me the honour to come to visite you first, as it was my purpose to have repaired unto you, so soone as I had a little refreshed my selfe, for I am but newly arrived.

Al. I should have beene very sorrie, Sir, to put you to the paines to come to me: wherefore I thought good to prevent you, and to come hither, so soone as I had any newes of your arrivall.

Clo. Sir, you oblige me very much, and I thanke you for taking the paines to come hither, seeing it was I was bound to doe you this dutie.

Al. You should not use these termes unto me the least of your servants, and whose whole devoir and obedience is devoted unto you.

Clo. It is I, Sir, shall for ever bow under the law of your commands. You doe me a thousand times more honour, than I have ever
jamais

jamais merité envers vous.

Al. Laissons tous ces discours à part, je vous en supplie, Monsieur, car vous sçavez trop bien que je vous suis. Mais dites moy, je vous prie, comment vous estes vous porté en vostre voyage ?

Clo. Le mieux du monde, Monsieur, par la grace de Dieu, si ce n'est qu'à Orleans, je fus un peu travaillé d'un accèz de fièvre, mais cela fut tost passé.

Al. Je croy que vous devez estre bien harassé : car vostre voyage a esté fort long & penible.

Clo. Pardonnez-moy, Monsieur, je ne suis nullement las, parce que je suis venu tout à l'aïse ; & puis j'ay un cheval qui a le pas fort doux, & ne travaille nullement son homme.

Al. Je benis de tout mon cœur le bon-heur de vostre voyage, mais encore plus celuy de vostre heureux retour.

Quand on rencontre fortuitement un amy par la ruë.

Clor. Monsieur, je prie Dieu qu'il vous donne le

been able to deserve of you.

Al. Let us lay aside these discourses, I beseech you, Sir, for you know very well what I am unto you. But tell me, I pray you, how have you done in your voyage ?

Clo. Excellently well, Sir, by the favour of God, saving that at Orleans, I was a little troubled with a fit of an ague, but that was quickly past over.

Al. I beleeve you cannot chuse but be much wearied, for your voyage hath been very long and painefull.

Clo. Pardon me, Sir, I am no whit wearie, because I have come at ease ; and besides, I have a horse that goes a very easie pace, and doth nothing at all shake a man.

Al. I blessie with all my heart the good hap of your voyage, but much more that of your happie return.

When you meete a friend by chance in the streete.

Clor. Sir, I praie God to give you a good morne,

bon our , & n'eusse pas
estimé de faire une si heu-
reuse rencontre , mais dites
moy un peu , comme vous
portez vous ?

Al. *Assez bien , graces à
Dieu , & tousjours prest à
vous rendre tres-humble
service.*

Clo. *C'est moy qui suis
au vostre de bien bon cœur.*

Al. *Sans mentir , il m'en-
nuoyoit extrêmement , de ce
que je n'avois plus l'hon-
neur de vous voir , & n'en
sçavois que iuger , ny pour
quelle occasion.*

Clo. *Monsieur , je vous
asseure , que j'ay souvent
esté en vostre maison , &
ne sçay si on vous l'aura
point dit : mais je n'ay ja-
mais peu avoir ce bon-heur
de vous y rencontrer.*

Al. *Si est-ce pourtant que
je ne m'en absente , que le
moins que je peux , &c.*

Pour s'offrir de faire com-
pagnie à son amy.

Al. *Monsieur , je vous
presenterois fort volontiers
ma compagnie , si je sçavois
qu'elle vous fust agreable ,
& qu'elle ne vous appor-*

I did not thinke to have
met you so happily , but
tell me a little how you
doe ?

Al. *Very well , thanks
be to God , and ever ready
to doe you most humble
service.*

Clo. *It is I that am at
yours with all my heart.*

Al. *Beleeve me , Sir , it hath
troubled mee extremely ,
that I have not had the
honour to see you all this
while , and I could not tell
what to thinke of it , nor
for what occasion.*

Clo. *Sir , I assure you , I
have beene often at your
house , and I know not
whether they have told
you of it , but I never had
the good happe to meete
with you.*

Al. *Yet for all that , I
am absent thence , as little
as I can , &c.*

To offer himselfe to accom-
panie his friend.

Al. *Sir , I would very
willingly present unto you
my companie , if I knew
it were acceptable to you ,
and that it might bring*
1 a f

taft point d'incommodité.

Clo. Tant s'en faut, Monsieur, ce me seroit beaucoup d'honneur, & mille fois plus que je ne merite : car la compagnie de ceux qui vous ressemblent, ne scauroit desplaire, ny incommoder ceux qui ayment l'honneur & la vertu : mais je crains que ce ne fust vous mesme qui vous incommoderiez.

Autrement.

Al. Monsieur, si ma compagnie vous pouvoit apporter quelque soulagement, je vous l'offrirois de fort bon cœur : mais je crains de vous importuner.

Clo. Helas ! Monsieur, vous prendriez trop de peine, & moy je le merite pas, & serois marry de vous la donner.

Al. Pardonnez moy, Monsieur, ce n'est pas peine que cela, je voudrois bien au contraire avoir ce bonheur d'estre tousjours en vostre compagnie, s'il se pouvoit faire, & tiendray tousjours le temps pour tres-bien employé que j'y mettray.

Clo. Monsieur, vous

you no inconvenience.

Clo. So much wanteth it of that, Sir, that it would bee to me much honour, and a thousand times more than I deserve : for the companie of such a friend as you are, cannot displease, nor bee incommodious to them which love honour and vertue ; but I feare it would rather bee troublesome to your selfe.

Otherwise.

Al. Sir, if my company might bring you any commoditie, I would offer it unto you with all my heart: but I feare to bee troublesome to you.

Clo. Alacke ! Sir, you should take too much paines, and I deserve it not, and would be sorie to trouble you so farre.

Al. Pardon me, Sir, it will bee no paines, that ; on the contrary, I wish I might have this happinellie, to bee ever in your companie, if it were possible, and shall thinke that time right well bestowed that I shall so imploy.

Clo. Sir, you oblige me
P 3 *m'obligez*

m'obliger trop, ne prenez pas ceste peine, je vous supplie, & vous baise les mains de bien bon cœur, & puis vous avez des affaires (peut estre) qui vous pressent plus que cela.

Al. Il n'y a affaire que je ne quittasse librement, pour l'amour de vous; & pour vous pouvoir rendre l'honneur, qui vous est due; outre ce, que la bonne affection que vous avez tousjours eue pour moy, m'oblige bien à de plus grandes choses: & puis je vous assure, que je n'ay rien qui me presse pour l'heure.

Clo. C'est moy, Monsieur, qui vous demeureray tousjours acquis & obligé toute ma vie: je ne refuseray donc pas cet honneur, qu'il vous plaist de me faire.

Pour recevoir un amy qui nous vient visiter.

Al. Monsieur, vous soyez le bien venu, vous me faites mille fois plus d'honneur que je n'ay jamais merité en vostre endroit.

Clo. Pardonnez-moy, Monsieur, c'est moy qui en

too much, take not this paines, I beseech you, and I kisse your hands withall my heart, and seeing you have businesse, (it may be) which presseth you more.

Al. There is no businesse that I would not freely quit for your sake, & to have the means to doe you the honour that is due unto you: besides that, the good affection which you have ever borne me, obligeth me to far greater matters: And then, I assure you, I have no urgent businesse at this time.

Clo. Sir, you have purchased a friend of me for ever, that shall remaine obliged unto you all my life: I will not then refuse this honour, which you please to doe me.

To receive a friend that comes visite us.

Al. Sir, you are welcome, you doe me a thousand times more honour, than I have ever deserved of you.

Clo. Pardon me, Sir, it is I that receive the honour
reçois

vefois l'honneur.

*Al. Monsieur, c'est l'ex-
cez de vostre bon naturel,
qui vous fait parler de la
sorte, avec ceste grande
bonté de vous mesme, qui
est née avec vous.*

*Clo. Les effets seront
autant de bouches, qui vous
rendront le fidelle resmoi-
gnage de l'amitié que je
vous porte.*

*Al. Vous m'obligez trop,
Monsieur, je n'ay jamais
merité tant de faveurs de
vous.*

*Clo. Monsieur, je ne fay
que mon devoir en cela;
car je sçay bien, que je vous
suis redevable de plus
grande chose.*

*Al. Ce n'est pas à l'en-
droit de ceux qui ne rele-
vent que de vous, que vous
devez user de ces termes.*

*Clo. Tant s'en faut,
Monsieur, que c'est moy qui
ne respire qu'après l'hon-
neur de vos commande-
mens.*

*Al. C'est moy, Monsieur,
qui voudrois vous resmoi-
gnier par effect plustost que
de parole, le desir que j'ay de
vous pouvoir rendre quel-
que service.*

of it.

*Al. Sir, it is the excessse
of your good nature, that
makes you speake so, toge-
ther with the great good-
nesse of your selfe, which
is borne with you.*

*Clo. The effects shall be
as so many mouths to ren-
der faithfull testimony un-
to you of the friendship
I beare you.*

*Al. You oblige me too
much, Sir, I have never de-
served so many favours
from you.*

*Clo. Sir, I doe but my
duty in that; for I know
well, that I am endebted
to you of a farre greater
matter.*

*Al. You should not use
these termes to such as
depend onely of you.*

*Clo. Sir, so farre is it off
from that, that it is I that
aspire after the honour of
you commandements.*

*Al. Sir, it is I that would
testifie unto you by effect
rather than by word, the
desire I have to bee able to
doe you some service.*

Clo. Vous me l'avez assez tesmoigné par le passé, & faudroit dire, que je serois du tout ingrat, si je ne me confessois entierement vostre obligé.

Al. Monsieur, vous m'excuserez, s'il vous plaist, car je ne vous ay jamais donné sujet de vous dire mon redevable; aussi les occasions ne s'en sont jamais presentées, mais c'est de gayeté de cœur, qu'il vous plaist de parler ainsi.

Clo. C'est le devoir mesme, qui tire ces paroles de ma bouche, pour me faire avoüer tout vostre, & que je n'auray de vie, ny de zele, que pour vous obeyr.

Al. Je voy bien que vous me voulez vaincre de courtoisie, & que ce ne seroit jamais fait: Mais ne vous plaist-il pas de vous asseoir, & nous parlerons plus à loisir? &c.

Pour convier un amy
à dîner.

Al. Monsieur, si vous me vouliez obliger de beaucoup, vous me feriez l'honneur,

Clo. You have already heretofore testified that sufficiently unto me, and I must say, I should be altogether ungratefull, if I did not confesse my selfe wholly bounden unto you.

Al. Sir, you shall excuse me, if you please, for I have never yet given you cause to say you are indebted to me; and indeed no such occasions have ever offered themselves, but out of your courtesie, it is your pleasure to speake so.

Clo. It is duty it selfe, that draweth these wordes from my mouth, & makes me acknowledge my selfe all yours, and that I have neither life nor zeale, but for to obey you.

Al. I see well you will overcome me in courtesie, and that wee should never have done: But will it please you sit downe Sir, and wee will talke more at leasure? &c.

To invite a friend to
dinner.

Al. Sir, if you would bee pleased to make mee much endebed to you, I
que

que de venir prendre un petit disner avec moy.

Clor. Monsieur, je vous remercie de bien bon cœur : je n'ay pas merit  tant d'honneur de vostre courtoisie : mais je vous prie de m'excuser pour ceste fois.

Al. Pourquoi, Monsieur, vous me ferez bien ceste faveur, s'il vous plaist, & je vous serviray en recompense, par tout o  il vous plaira m'employer.

Clo. Monsieur, vous estes trop courtois, & persuasif pour vous esconduire ; mais je vous donneray de l'incommodit .

Al. Vous ne s auriez, Monsieur, mais vous me ferez beaucoup plus d'honneur que je ne s aurois mériter en vostre endroit.

Clo. Monsieur, traitez moy donc comme vostre serviteur, je vous en prie : car ce n'est pas avec moy, qu'il faut user de ceremonies.

Al. Ce n'est pas que j'aye chose digne de vous retenir   disner : Mais il n'y a remede, si faut-il que vous exerciez un peu de vostre patience avec moy, comme

would intreate you, doe me the honour, to take a short dinner with me.

Clor. I thanke you, Sir, withall my heart, I have not deserved so much honour of your courtesie : but I pray you excuse me for this time.

Al. Why, Sir, you shall doe me this favour, if you please, and I will serve you in requitall, in what place soever you shall please to imploy me.

Clo. Sir, you are too courteous and perswasive to be denied : but (I feare) I shall bee troublesome to you.

Al. You cannot, Sir, but you shall doe mee much more honour than I can deserve of you.

Clo. Sir, entertaine mee then as your servant, I pray you : for it is not with me you need to use ceremonies.

Al. It is not, that I have any thing worthie to retaine you to dinner : but there is no remedie, you must a little exercise your patience with me, as with

avec

avec vostre amy, qui vous en supplie.

Clo. Si tous ceux qui ont à faire abstinence, estoient obligez à la faire de la sorte, elle leur seroit fort douce, & agreable : C'est un excez de faveur, que vous me faites : pardonnez moy, s'il vous plaist, si je me rends importun.

Al. Il n'est pas besoin de pardon, où n'y a point d'offence, & je vous dis, que vous ne sçauriez importuner vos serviteurs, & ceux qui vous cherissent, à l'esgal de leur vie : Mais, c'est plustost à moy de vous demander pardon, de vous avoir arresté, pour vous faire un si maigre traitement, toutesfois, c'est de bon cœur, &c.

Ceremonies pour laver les mains, se mettre à table.

Al. Aux invitez. &c, Messieurs, ne vous plaist-il pas que nous lavions les mains ?

Les invitez. Apres vous, Monsieur, s'il vous plaist.

Al. N'usons point de ce-

your friend, and I entreate you to it.

Clo. If all such as are to make abstinence, were bound to doe it in this sort, it would bee very sweete and pleasant to them : It is an excessive of favour, that you doe mee : pardon me, I pray you, if I make my selfe troublesome.

Al. There is no need of pardon, where there is no offence, and this I say, you cannot bee troublesome to your servants, and them that cherish you as their life : But it is my part rather to aske pardon of you, for having stayed you to so poore intertainment, yet it is with a good heart, &c.

Compliments for washing of hands sitting downe at table, &c.

Al. To the Guests. Come Gentlemen, will it please you wash ?

The Guests. After you, Sir, if you please.

Al. Let us use no ceremonies

remonies , je vous en prie : car je les abhorre ; prenons de l'eau , s'il vous plaist.

Les invitez. Monsieur, ce ne sont point ceremonies lors que le devoir y commande : Vous irez le premier , si c'est vostre plaisir.

Al. Ça, ça, puis que vous ne voulez autrement faire, lavons donc tous ensemble.

Les invitez. C'est une chose qui ne se devoit faire : mais puis que vous le voulez ainsi, nous le ferons.

Al. Et quoy , Messieurs, ne vous plaist-il pas prendre place ?

Les invitez. Ce sera apres vous , Monsieur , s'il vous plaist , & puis cela vous est deu de droit , & de raison, ces ceremonies n'y serviront de rien.

Al. Bien, Messieurs, pour vous contenter , je m'en vay mettre icy.

Les invitez. Monsieur, vous monterez plus haut, s'il vous plaist, voila vostre place.

Al. Monsicur Modin, vous vous mettrez li , s'il vous plaist, car voila vostre lieu destiné.

Mo. Vous me rendez

monies , I pray you : for I hate them; let us take water if you please.

The Guests. Sir, they are not ceremonies , which duty commandeth : You shall goe first if it bee your pleasure.

Al. Come, come, seeing you will not do otherwise, let us wash all together.

The Guests. This is a thing that ought not to be: but seeing you will have it so , we will doe it.

Al. What , Gentlemen, will it not please you take your places ?

The Guests. After you, Sir, if you please, and then it is your due by right and reason , these ceremonies serve to little purpose.

Al. Well , Gentlemen, to content you , I goe sit downe heere.

The Guests. Sir, you shall sit up higher, if you please, there is your place.

Al. M. Modin , I pray you sit you there , for that place is destinate for you.

Mo. You make me much

tour

216 *The French Compliments.*

tout honteux , Monsieur , du trop d'honneur que vous me faites.

Al. Au contraire , Monsieur , je ne vous rends pas ce que vous meritez : car l'on ne sçauroit rendre trop d'honneur à ceux qui vous ressemblent.

Mo. Monsieur , je croy que vous vous moquez de moy , quand vous usez de ces termes en mon endroit : car vous sçavez bien qu'il n'est pas besoin de complimens entre les amis , comme nous sommes de long-temps.

Al. L'on ne vous en sçauroit rendre assez , je le dis encore.

Mo. C'est tout le contraire , avec vostre permission : car vous n'en sçauriez si peu faire , qu'il n'y en ait trop.

Al. Holà , Messieurs , pourquoy sommes nous icy ? Mangcons , je vous prie : ça que je vous serve.

Clo. Je vous remercie , Monsieur , avec vostre permission , je prendray la hardiesse de boire à vos bonnes graces.

ashamed , Sir , of the too much honour you doe me.

Al. On the contrary , Sir , I yeeld you not so much as you deserve : for it is impossible to give too much honour to such as you are.

Mo. Sir , I feare you mocke me in using these termes unto mee , for you know there is no need of compliments among friends , such as wee are and have bene this long time.

Al. I say againe , one cannot yeeld you enough.

Mo. It is otherwise , Sir , with your permission , for you cannot doe so little , but that there will be too much.

Al. Stay , Gentlemen , wherefore are we here ? let us fall to our meat , I pray you : come let me carve to you.

Clo. I thanke you , Sir , by your good leave , I will be hold to drinke to you.

Al.

Al. Je vous baise les mains , de bien bon cœur , je m'en vay vous faire raison.

Pour entretenir son amy à Table.

Al. Monsieur , je vous convie à la patience , de ce que vous estes mal recen.

Clo. Helas ! Monsieur , je ne puis estre mal en vostre compagnie , au contraire , je suis cent fois mieux que je ne merite

Al. Je suis marry , que nous n'avons plustost sceu vostre venuë : car nous eussions fait provision de quelque chose de meilleur , là où il n'y a rien que l'ordinaire , parce que nous avons esté prins à l'improviste : mais il n'y a remede , je vous supplie de prendre ce qu'il y a d'aussi bonne part , que s'il y en avoit d'avantage , & de meilleur

Clo. La bonne volonté , & l'effect s'y voyent à veuë descouverte : mais que voudriez vous d'avantage ? Pour moy , je ne desirerois pas d'estre mieux.

Al. Or ça , Monsieur , ne laissons pas de faire bonne chere , encore qu'il n'y ait

Al. I kisse your hands , with all my heart , I will goe pledge you.

To entertaine a friend at Table.

Al. Sir , I invite you to patience , in that you are ill intertained.

Clo. Alas ! Sir , I cannot be ill in your companie , on the contrary , I am a hundred times better than I deserve.

Al. I am sorie wee no sooner knew of you coming : for we would have made provision of some better thing , whereas now there is nothing hut ordinarie , because wee were taken on a suddaine : but there is no remedy , I beseech you take this in as good part , as if there were more and better.

Clo. Sir , your good will , and the effect of it are here evidently seene : but what would you have more ? For my part , I would never desire to be better.

Al. Well , Sir , let us make good cheere and bee merrie , though there bee

pas dequoy.

Clo. Monsieur, je ne sçay pour quoy vous dites cela, car je ne vy jamais plus de viande, ny mieux assaisonnée: mais que desiriez vous donc de surplus? Pour moy je n'ay pas besoin que l'on me presse.

Al. Il n'y a rien que des choses communes; aussi, c'est Dieu qui nous a ainsi rendus les choses nécessaires, faciles à trouver; & à fait que celles de difficile rencontre, ne sont pas nécessaires. Ne vous plaist-il pas que je vous serve de ce chapon? mais buvons premièrement.

Excuse de l'Hôte à ses amis apres le repas.

Alc. Messieurs, je vous demande pardon, de vous avoir icy arresté, pour vous y faire un si pauvre traitement: J'en rougirois véritablement, n'estoit la confiance, que j'ay en vostre facilité, & amitié, qui sçaura bien excuser ma faute, & l'imputer au grand contentement, que je pretends en vostre compagnie.

Les Invitez. Monsieur,

not wherewithall.

Clo. Sir, I know not what cause you have to say so, for I never saw more meate, nor better seasoned: but what then would you desire to have more? For my part, I have no need of invitation to eate.

Al. Here is nothing but common things; & indeed, it is God that hath thus made necessarie things, easie to bee found: and hath made them which are hard to come by, to bee not necessary. Will it please you that I carve to you of this capon? but let us drinke first.

The Hostes excuse to his friends after meat.

Alc. Gentlemen, I crave pardon of you, for staying you here, to give you so poore entertainment: Truly I should blush at it, were it not for the confidence I have of your kindnesse and friendship, which may well excuse my fault, and impute it to the great contentment that I take in your companie.

The Guests. Sir, you
vons

vous nous prevenez ce qui estoit de nostre devoir, car c'estoit à nous à prendre ce temps en avance, & à vous remercier du bon accueil, & de la bonne chere que vous nous avez fait : mais le cœur sera caution de la langue, & satisfera pour elle, lequel vous tesmoignera tousjours de son ressentiment par les effets, aux occasions qui se presenteront. Cependant, prenant congé de vous, nous nous recommandons à vos bonnes graces.

Lettres de Compliment.

Monsieur, ces traits de ma main, seront pour vous supplier de m'honorer des vostres, & pour vous confirmer de nouveau le dessein que j'ay tousjours dans l'ame, qui est une parfaite volonté de vivre,

Monsieur, Vostre.

Monsieur, Ce devoir vous confirmera ceux que je desire vous rendre en vous servant, avec ceste priere, de me conserver tousjours en vostre souvenance, comme une personne qui n'af-

prevent us in our dutie, for it had beene our parts to anticipate this opportunity, and to thanke you for the good entertainment, and good cheere you have made us : but our hearts shall bee sureties for our tongues, and shall make satisfaction for them, and ever testifie by effects the true feeling thereof, as occasions shall bee offred. Meane while, taking our leave of you, wee recommend us to your good favours.

Complimentall Letters.

Sir, These lines, traced with my hand, are to beseech you, to honour mee with yours, and to confirme a new unto you the firme purpose I have conceived in my soule, which is a perfect will to live ever,

Yours.

Sir, This duty shall confirme unto you others which I desire to performe, in doing you service with this request, that you bee pleased to preserve mee ever in your remembrance, *fessionnera*

fectionnera jamais d'autre merite que celui de vous bien obeir, pour estre estimé de vous, Monsieur, le plus obeissant de vos serviteurs.

Monsieur, La passion que j'ay pour vostre service, m'a enhardy de mettre la main à la plume, pour vous supplier de favoriser ce mien amy; le subject en est petit, mais la recognoissance en sera grande; je l'attendray donc de vostre courtoisie, comme devez esperer de mon devoir toutes sortes de services, puis que veritablement je suis, Monsieur, vostre tres-humble serviteur.

Monsieur, Je suis tellement destiné à vous obeir, que je n'ay jamais eu desir plus passionné dans l'ame; raschez donc à me contenter usant souvent de mes services: car ils sont vostres, je les vous donne, sans me reserver que l'honneur de leur employ, puis qu'il me fera tousjours paroistre, Monsieur, en quel lieu que je sois, pour celui que je suis, qui est,

Vostre tres-humble.

as one that will never affect any other merite than that of obeying you, that I may be esteemed of you, The most obedient of your servants.

Sir, The passionate desire I have to doe you service hath imboldened me to put penne to paper, to besecch you to favour this my friend; the subject is small, but the acknowledgment thereof shall be great; I will therefore expect it from your courtesie, as you may justly looke for all sortes of services from my duty, seeing I am truly, Your most humble servant.

Sir, I am so farre destined to obey you, that I never had a more passionate desire within my soule; endeavour therefore my content (I pray you) in using often my services: for they are yours, I give them you, reserving onely to my selfe the honour of employing them, which in what place soever I bee, will ever make me appeare to bee,

*Yours most humble.
Monsieur,*

Monſieur, *Vos prieres ont eſté eſſectuées, & par conſequent mes deſirs accomplis, l'un dependoit de l'autre: car le moindre de vos plaiſirs ſera toujours mon contentement. N'eſpargnez donc pas mes ſervices pour vous obeir, & encore qu'ils ſoyent indignes de vos commandemens, ſouvenez vous au moins qu'ils procedent,* Monſieur, de voſtre tres-humble ſerviteur.

Monſieur, *Si vous avez eſté privé de mes lettres, vous ne l'avez pas eſté de mon ſouvenir, mais ſi le défaut d'occaſion m'excuse, ma volonté vous ſatisſait: auſſi bien n'avois-je rien de plus nouveau à vous dire, Monſieur, ſi ce n'eſt que je ſuis tousjours,* Voſtre.

Lettre de recognoiſſance.

Monſieur, *De quels devoirs recognoiſtray-je vos courtoiſies, qui m'ont tant obligé, que pour le bien dire, il faut le taire? de vous offrir mes ſervices, ils vous ſont deſja acquis; de me*

Sir, Your requests have beene effected, and conſequently my deſires accompliſhed, the one depending on the other, for the leaſt of your pleaſures ſhall ever be my contentment. Spare not then my ſervices for to obey you, and although they bee unworthie your command, yet at leaſt remember they proceed,

Sir, from your moſt humble ſervant.

Sir, If you have beene deprived of my letters, you have not beene of my remembrance, but if the want of opportunity can excuſe me, my good will may give you ſatisfaction: and indeed I had none other newes to write unto you, but that I am ever,

Yours.

A Letter of acknowledgment.

Sir, With what devoirs ſhall I acknowledge your courteſies, which have ſo much obliged mee, that the beſt way to expreſſe it is to be ſilent? to offer unto you my ſervices, they are

Q

preſenter

presenter moy-mesme , je
suis desja vostre , je n'ay
donc que des volonteꝝ pour
vostre satisfaction , mais
mille services pour vostre
obeissance, estant tousjours,
Monsieur, Vostre tres-
humble serviteur.

Monsieur, Je sçay hono-
rer vos merites par raison,
& recognoistre, par devoir
vos courtoisies , qui m'ont
trop obligé pour en estre in-
grat, encore que je n'y puis-
se jamais dignement satis-
faire, mais au moins si en
auray-je tousjours , & le
desir & l'esperance, & ce-
pendant la ferme volonté de
vivre & mourir,

Monsieur, Vostre.

Monsieur, Vous vous
plaisez tousjours à obliger
ceux qui vous sont les plus
redevables , j'en suis tes-
moing , & vostre courtoisie
l'experience : Tellement,
que ie suis honteux d'estre
tousjours vostre obligé sans
pouvoir seulement esperer,
d'en recognoistre jamais la
faveur , toutesfois, si une
fiervente passion parfaite-
ment zelée pour vostre ser-

vowed to you already , to
present unto you my selfe,
I am already yours , I have
nothing then but my good
will for your satisfaction,
yet a thousand services for
your obedience, beeing ever
Your most humble servant.

Sir, Reason teacheth me
to honour your merites,
and duty to acknowledge
your curtesies , which have
too much obliged me, to be
ungratefull , though I can
never worthily satisfie for
them, but I shall ever have
at least a desire and a hope,
and in the meane while a
firme will to live and die,

Yours.

Sir, You take pleasure
ever to oblige those unto
you , which are already
most in your debt , I am
witness of it , and your
courtesie is the experience:
So that I am ashamed to
be ever still your obliged,
without having so much as
hope to be able ever to re-
quite the favour of it : yet
notwithstanding, if a fer-
vent passion perfectly zea-
lous,

*vice, vous peut satisfaire
en mes défauts, agreez-la
je vous supplie, puis qu'elle
procède, Monsieur,
de vostre tres-humble.*

A un amy malade.

*Monsieur, Ayant esté af-
feuré de vostre maladie, je
n'ay plus douté de mon mal,
puis que le moindre de vos
ressentiments, m'est un
desplaisir extreme. Or si mes
prieres peuvent quelque
chose pour vostre santé, &
par consequent pour mon
soulagement, vous serez
bien tost guery, & moy con-
tent, Monsieur, qui suis,
Vostre tres-humble.*

*Adieu à un amy, sur la ne-
cessité d'un voyage.*

*Monsieur, Une fâcheuse
nécessité me prive pour un
long-temps de l'honneur de
vostre présence, (mais non
pas sans regret) car vostre
conversation m'est si agrea-
ble, que je l'ay tousjours
preferée à toute sorte de
plaisirs, jugez donc main-
tenant si séparé de vous je
pourray vivre content, mais
quoy que s'en soit, il me
faut souffrir ce mal, puis*

*lous for your service, can
satisfie you for my defects,
accept it I beseech you,
seeing it proceedeth from
Tours most humble.*

To a sicke friend.

*Sir, being certified of
your sicknesse, I was as-
sured of my evill. seeing
the least of your sufferings
is to mee an extreme dis-
pleasure. Now if my pray-
ers may any thing pre-
vaile for your health, and
consequently for my ea-
sing, you shall very soone
be well, and I contented,
who am,*

Tour most humble.

*A farewell to a friend, upon
the necessity of a voyage.*

*Sir, An irkesome neces-
sity depriveth me for a long
time of the honout of your
présence (but not without
greefe) for your conversa-
tion is so much to my li-
king, that I have ever pre-
ferred it before all sorts
of pleasures; judge you
now then, if separated
from you, I can live con-
tent: but how ever it bee,
I must endure this evill,*

qu'il est nécessaire à mon bien. Cependant souvenez vous, que je ne vous oublieray jamais, & qu'en quel lieu que je sois, je me feray tousjours paroistre pour celuy que je suis,

Monsieur, Vostre.

A sa Maistresse.

Mademoiselle, Deslors qu'avec vostre beauté j'eus la cognoissance de vos merites, je ressentis quelque secrette puissance, qui força doucement mes volontez à vous honorer, & mon cœur à ne respirer que vostre amour. Si tant est donc que mes services, dont le Ciel a reservé l'integrité, pour vos commandemens, vous soyent tant soit peu agreables, permettez, Mademoiselle, que je m'honore de ce tiltre de

Vostre serviteur.

Si l'amour m'apprenoit aussi bien à dire mon tourment, comme à le souffrir, ma pitié vous rendroit sensible à mes plaintes, mais mûet pour trop endurer, je n'ay que ma constance pour remede, pour esperance :

seeing it is necessary for my good. In the meane time remember, that I will never forget you, and that in what place soever I am, I will ever make it appeare that I am,

Tours.

To his Mistresse.

Gentlewoman, when together with your beauty I had knowledge of your merites, I felt some secret power, that sweetly enforced my will to honour you, & my heart to breath forth nothing but your love. If so be then my services, the integrity of which Heaven hath reserved for your commands, be never so little acceptable unto you, permit (I beseech you) that I honour my selfe with the title of

Your humble servant.

If love did teach me as well to speake my torment, as to suffer it, pitie would make you sensible of my complaints; but beeing dumb by too much enduring, I have nothing but my constancie for my

vostre

vostre douceur, pour desir;
& vos commandemens,
pour mon honneur, Mada-
moiselle, comme

Vostre tres-humble
serviteur.

Flours de Complimens.

Absence.

Je ne m'estimeray point
absent de vous, cependant
que j'auray quelque place
en vostre cœur, & en vostre
memoire.

Faites que mon estoigne-
ment ne change point vos
volontez, non plus qu'il es-
branle la resolution que j'ay
faicte de vivre vostre.

Adieux.

Je departiray d'avec
vous, sans que mes volon-
tez departent de vostre
service.

Adieu, beau Soleil de ma
vie, je departs d'avec vous
pour ceste heure, mais soyez
tousjours assuree que me
volontez ne se departiront
jamais de vostre service.

Affections.

Vous ne ferez jamais
tant pour moy, que l'affe-
ction dont je vous adore,

remedy and for my hope;
your sweetnesse, for my
desire; and your comman-
dements for my honour,
as being

Your most humble servant.

Flowers of Compliments.

Absence.

I shall not thinke my self
absent from you, whilest I
shall have some place in
your heart, and in your
memorie.

Vouchsafe that my farre
absence change not your
wills, no more than it
shaketh the resolution I
have to live yours.

Farewells.

I shall depart from you,
yet my wills shall not de-
part from your ser-
vice.

Farewell, faire Sunne
of my live, though I now
depart from you, yet bee
ever assured that my wills
shall never depart from
your service.

Affections.

You can never doe so
much for me, but that the
affection wherewith I

Et la foy que j'ay en vous ne soyent encore plus grandes.

Madamoiselle, vous estes la premiere à qui mes affections se sont offertes, & serez (s'il vous plaist) la derniere qui en aura la possession.

Permettez moy que je vous puisse seulement une fois descouvrir mes affections, & puis me condamnez à un perpetuel silence, si vous le trouvez bon.

Si vous mesurez mes affections à l'esgal de la creance que vous devez avoir de vos merites, vous ne serez point en doute, que mon amour ne soit saintement veritable.

Vous estes l'œil de mes yeux, la pensée de mes pensées, la perfection de mes défauts, l'amour de mes amours, le but & la fin de tous mes desirs & esperances: Souvenez vous donc de mes affections, & pour estre esloigné de vos beaux yeux, que je ne le fois pas de vos bonnes grâces.

adore you, and my faithfullness unto you will be greater.

Mistresse, you are the first to whom my affections have beene offered, and I shall ever have (if you please) the last possession of them.

Give me leave onely once to discover unto you my affections, and then (if you thinke good) condemn me to a perpetuall silence.

If you would measure mine affections equally to the beleefe you should have of your owne merits, you would no wise doubt, but that my love is holily true.

You are the eye of my eyes, the thought of my thoughts, the perfection of my defects, the love of my loves. the ayme and the end of all my desires and hopes. Remember then my affections, and though I be farre absent from your faire eyes, yet let me never bee so from your good favours.

Amour.

Amour.

Je vous ayme tellement, qu'il me seroit plus malaisé de vous oublier, qu'il ne me seroit difficile de me résoudre à la mort : & sçachez pour certain, que je seray tousjours plustost content & disposé de consentir à la haine de moy-mesme, qu'à l'amour de nul autre object que le vostre.

Vostre veü me peut estre interdite, & me pouvez empescher de vous parler : mais de n'avoir emprainte l'effigie de vostre divine beauté, & ne l'aymer & servir, il est hors non seulement de vostre puissance, mais encore de la mienne : car je vous suis un accident tellement inseparable, que vous ne pouvez estre sans moy.

Beauté.

Vaincu de vostre beauté j'ay rendu les armes de ma liberté & franchise en vostre obeissance.

Rien ne m'ostera jamais du cœur, si non la mort, la belle image de vostre visage bien-aymé.

Love.

I love you so well, that it would bee harder for me to forget you, than it would bee difficult for me to resolve my self to death: & know for certain, that I shall ever be rather content & ready to consent to the hatred of my selfe, than to the love of any other object than yours.

Your sight may bee forbidden me, and you may hinder mee from speaking to you, but not to have the effigies of your divine beaurie imprinted within me, and not to love and serve it, is not onely out of your power, but also out of mine : for I am unto you so unseparable an accident, as you cannot be without mee.

Beautie.

Being overcome by your beautie, I have yeelded up the armes of my liberty & freedome unto your obedience.

Nothing but death shall ever take away out of my heart, the faire image of your beloved countenance.

Bonté.

C'est vostre bonté, qui supplée à mon peu de merite, lequel ne m'eust osé promettre la faveur dont vous me gratifiez.

Constance.

Ma constance vous pourra monstrier aisément, qu'elle a autant de courage à mourir pour vous, qu'elle a eu de cœur & d'envie de vivre en vous aymant.

Je feray paroistre aux siècles à venir, que je suis celui qui pour vous s'est rendu le roc invincible de fermeté : car j'entretendray ma constance, & jamais ne la verray partir de moy qu'avec les derniers respirs de mon ame.

Courtoisie.

C'est vostre Courtoisie qui me preste la faveur, que le Ciel & la nature m'avoient déniées.

C'est par courtoisie que vous me voulez du bien, comme par devoir je vous honnore.

Goodnesse.

It is your goodnesse, which supplieth the slenderesse of my desert, whicch durst not promise me the favour wherewith you gratifie me.

Constancie.

My constancie can easily shew unto you, that it hath as much courage to die for you, as it hath had heart and desire to live in loving you.

I will make it appeare to the ages to come, that for you I am become the invincible rocke of firmnesse : for I will maintain my constancie, and will never see it depart from me, but with the last gaspes of my soule.

Courtesie.

It is your courtesie lendeth me this favour, which Heaven and nature had denied me.

It is of your courtesie that you wish mee good, as by duty I honour you.

Crainte.

Crainte.

La crainte que j'ay, que mon peu de merite vous oste l'espoir de me vouloir du bien, rend aucunement imparfaites toutes les joyes, que ceste douce imagination me faisoit juger si entieres & si accomplies.

Desirs.

Mes desirs me rendent aussi soigneux de vous complaire, comme je suis obligé par devoir & poussé par inclination à vous faire service.

Donner.

Je vous dedie ce cy du cœur que je vous ay voué mon service: & si c'est chose indigne de vostre merite, vous serez d'autant plus digne de loüange en l'acceptant.

Ayez plus esgard à l'affection du donneur, qu'au merite du don; & recevez le, non comme chose digne de merite, mais comme un tesmoignage de ma bonne volonté.

Feare.

The feare I have lest the slenderesse of my defect, deprive you of desire to wish mee well, makes somewhat imperfect all the joyes, which this sweet imagination made me deem so intire and so accomplished.

Desires.

My desires make me as carefull to please you, as I am bound by duty, and mooved by inclination to doe you service.

To give.

I have dedicated this unto you with that heart wherewith I have vowed unto you my service: and if it be a thing unworthy your desert, you shall bee so much the more worthy of praise in accepting it.

Have more respect to the affection of the giver, than to the merit of the gift, & receive it not as a thing worthy of merit, but as a testimonie of my good will.

Expe-

Experience.

J'ay tant d'experience de vostre bonne volonté, qu'il reste seulement que vous experimentiez le desir de ma recognoissance.

J'ay tant faict, de preuve de vostre amitié & fidelité, que j'espere que vous ne manquerez au besoing.

Faveur.

Je ne sçay quel service satisferoit aux faveurs que j'ay receu de vous.

Inconstance.

Vous usez de vos amis comme de fleurs, qui ne plaisent, qu'alors qu'elles sont nouvelles.

Je m'apperceoy que ceste ardante affection, qui me souloit tenir si vivante en vos pensées, ne regne d'aujourd'hui plus en vous.

Louange.

Je ne pourrois, sans me rendre capable d'irreverence, parler autrement à vous, qu'avec vos loüanges.

Si je vous louë peu, sça-

Experience.

I have so much experience of your goodwill, that there resteth only that you have experience also of mine acknowledgement.

I have made so great proofe of your friendship and faithfullnesse, that I hope you will not fayle at any need.

Favour.

I know not with what service to satisfie the favours which I have received of you.

Inconstancie.

You use your friends as flowers, which please no longer than they are new.

I perceive that the fervent affection, which was wont so to keep me living in your thoughts, hath no more dominion in you.

Praise.

I could not, without making my selfe guilty of want of reverence, speake otherwise to you, than with praises.

*If I commend you but
chez*

*chez que c'est pour penſſer-
voir.*

*Je ſuis plus obligé de ces
louanges à voſtre courtoiſie,
qu'à la verité de mes me-
rites.*

Memoire.

*Ne faites pas ce tort à
voſtre fidele de le laiſſer
couler de voſtre memoire, il
en appelleroit de voſtre ju-
gement à voſtre bonté.*

*N'oubliez point celui
qui vous a continuellement
en ſa memoire.*

*Conſervez moy vivant
en vos penſées, comme je
vous tiens au plus ſenſible
lieu de mon ame.*

Merites.

*Je ne ſçaurois faire
ſi grande choſe, que ce ne
ſoit trop peu pour vos me-
rites, & pour mon deſir.*

*Voſtre merite me pouſſe
à vous aymer, mon humeur
me le permet, & mon con-
tentement veut, que j'em-
ploye ma bonne volonte, pour
vous ſervir.*

*Les louanges que vous
m'attribuez, procedent de*

*little, know it is becauſe I
know but little.*

*I am more bound to
your courteſie for theſe
praiſes, than to the truth
of my merites.*

Memorie

*Wrong not ſo much
our faithfull friend, as to
let him ſlip out of your
remembrance; for then
would hee appeale from
your judgement to your
goodneſſe.*

*Forget not him, who
hath you continually in
memorie.*

*Preſerve mee living in
your thoughts, as I hold
you ever in the moſt ſen-
ſible place of my ſoule.*

Deſerts.

*I could not doe any
thing ſo great, but that it
is too little for your de-
ſerts, and for my deſire.*

*Your deſert moveth
me to love you, my liking
gives mee leave, and my
contentment willeth that
I employ my good will for
to doe you ſervice.*

*The praiſes which you
attribute unto me, proceed
voſtre*

vostre volonté, & non de
mon merite.

Obeir.

Je ne puis, ny ne dois
commander à celuy auquel
je suis tenu d'obeir.

Vous voulez plustost obeir
à vostre courtoisie, qu'à vo-
stre jugement.

Je n'auray durant mes
jours, aucune volonté, qui
n'obeisse à la vostre.

Vous sçavez la puissance
que vous avez sur moy, &
que je suis autant vostre,
quels pourriez souhaiter.

Offrir & presenter ser-
vice.

Pour l'honneur & l'am-
bition on s'aspire, n'est que
de me voir employé en vostre
service.

Le plus favorable don que
me puissiez offrir, c'est vo-
stre amitié, laquelle je pre-
ferre à tous autres thre-
sors.

Prier & souhaiter.

Le Ciel qui exauce les
vœux des fideles, benisse &
contente vos desirs.

Dieu vous rende la plus
heureuse qui vive, tout

from your will, and not
from my desert.

To obey.

I cannot, neither ought
I command him whom I
am bound to obey.

You will rather obey
your courtesie, than your
judgment.

Whilest I live, I shall
have none other will, but
to obey yours.

You know the power
you have over mee, and
that I am as much yours,
as you can wish.

To offer and present ser-
vice.

All the honour and am-
bition I aspire unto, is but
to see my selfe employed in
your service.

The most favourable
gift you can offer unto me,
is your friendship, which
I preferre before all other
treasures.

To pray and wish.

Heaven, that heareth the
vows of the faithfull, blesse
and content your desires.

God make you the hap-
piest alive, as he hath made

ainsi

ainsi qu'il vous a fait la plus belle, & la plus accomplie.

you the fairest, and most accomplished.

Regrets.

Je regrette tellement nostre separation, que rien ne touchera jamais mon ame à l'esgal du desplaisir que j'en supporte.

Griefes.

I grieve so at our separation, that nothing shall ever touch my soule equally to that sorrow which I endure for it.

Rendre graces.

Si je vous ay fait quelque service agreable, croyez que ce n'estoit encore que l'ombre, de ce que vous desire monstrer par veritables effects.

To give thanks.

If I have done you any acceptable service, beleeve it, it was yet but the shadow of that which I desire to shew you by true effects.

Siles services que je vous ay faits ont esté petits, la volonté que j'ay eu de reconnoistre les biens, & honneurs que j'ay receus de vous, est grande en toute extremité.

If the services that I have done you have beene small, the will I have had to acknowledge the favours and honours I have received from you, is great in all extremity.

Yeux.

Eyes.

Vos yeux jettent tant d'esclairs, que (comme Soleils) ils reboucent la pointe de la veüe à tous ceux, qui les osent regarder.

Your eyes cast forth such lightnings, that (as Suns) they reverberate the point of the sight of all them that dare behold them.

Vous avez tellement establi vostre souverainete sur mon ame, qu'un seul clin de vos yeux dispose de l'estat de ma vie.

You have so firmly established your sovereignty over my soule, that with one onely winke of your eyes, you may dispose of the state of my life.



